



Ted Bundy: A Visual Timeline

Robert A. Dielenberg (PhD)

Updated Edition

Endorsements

Rob Dielenberg's research on Ted Bundy is complete and thorough. This book, an assimilation of his findings, is a major step towards understanding the mind of one of the world's most puzzling serial killers. Every person who seriously wants to understand the criminal mind should read it.

- Al Carlisle (PhD Clinical Psychology) - Author of *I'm Not Guilty*

Dr. Dielenberg has done an exhaustive study of the life and crimes of Ted Bundy. When dealing with matters of which I have personal knowledge he is extremely accurate, and I trust that the rest of his book exhibits the same high quality and adherence to fact. Although one can disagree with some of the conclusions he draws, no one can disagree that he has produced an invaluable reference for anyone wishing to research serial killers in general and Ted Bundy in particular.

- George R. Dekle Sr. (Law Skills Professor) - Author of *The Last Murder*

Rob Dielenberg's book is well-planned out, and accuracy of information is spot on. Good reading. I recommend that anyone who is or is going to be a homicide investigator read this book. I also recommend that any Criminology Professor requires their students to read this book.

- Don Patchen (AAS Law Enforcement, Ret. Homicide Investigator) -

It has always struck me as odd that after the death of Albert Einstein, his brain was assiduously and aggressively studied to determine the neurological correlates of intelligence, and yet Bundy's brain, which perhaps held clues to the depraved mind, was fried in the electric chair. Granted, this is the curious view of a student of neuroscience, and ignores many historical, legal, and social concerns, but the ultimate goal of understanding this other crucial dimension to humanity is just as valid, and perhaps even more critical. Here, Dielenberg meticulously recreates a neurological model that would make Bundy's brain blush, artfully blending modern neuroscientific scholarship with the known behavior and autobiographical statements of one of America's most notorious serial killers. This is a powerful and provocative addition to the field of neurocriminology.

- Jack Pement (MS Biology) - Author of the essay 'Blame the amygdala'

Purchase Information

This book can be purchased at:
<https://gumroad.com/dielenator#>

PDF format (smartphone, tablet, laptop, desktop)

Low res version (100 dpi): USD\$9.99

High res version (300 dpi): USD\$29.99

eBook format

Undecided.

Book format

Lightning Source

This book is dedicated to all the families and authorities who were impacted by the deeds of Theodore Robert Bundy.

Electronic version

Copyright © Robert A. Dielenberg, May 2016
Copyright © Motion Mensura Pty. Ltd. May 2016

Updated edition, November 2016.

Paperback version

First edition, December 2016.

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system, or transmitted, in any form or by any means without the prior written permission of the author.

ISBN 978-0-9945792-2-5

For enquiries or feedback, please visit:
<https://www.facebook.com/Ted-Bundy-A-Visual-Timeline-1780367725516517/>

Acknowledgements

I started this book alone, not realizing what I was getting myself into. As I progressed and dug deeper into the Ted Bundy story, I realized that if I was to go forward I would need help.

I am very fortunate in that I encountered three individuals that not only jumped at the chance to make this book better, but openly embraced the often frustratingly detailed work that it involved: Chris Mortensen, Chuck Meeks, and Dave Woody. Mike Dicianna and Drew Bales also contributed to specific cases making them more accurate. The book in its present form would not exist without the enthusiasm of all these people. Concretely, they provided photos, many of which required driving interstate, interviews with original sources, and documents (scanned and photographed). They also played a vital role in shaping some of the speculations developed in the book by visiting locations where Ted was active and researching topographical information.

I also want to thank the many contributors of photographs. These range from the official archives (Florida State, King County, Von Drehle), to local libraries and university collections. In particular I wish to thank Detective Don Patchen (retired), Vincent Tan, John Young (Colorado Maps), Randy Stilson (Evergreen State College), Marty Blackson (Central Washington University) and Kristina Erickson. George Dekle Sr. in particular was extremely helpful in providing information and guidance during the later stages of the book.

I also want to thank Al Carlisle for his help and feedback as the book progressed. Al was always there when I needed him.

I would also like to thank Chris Eskridge for his reflections on the Laura Aime case and Stéphane Bourgoin for his information on Gerard Schaefer.

Lastly, I want to thank Michael Debono for his erudite editing services and our facebook and other contributors who have sent in additional information that had previously not been made publicly available.

Abbreviations

Books:

Holmes & Holmes 2008: (H&H 2008).
Keppel & Birnes 2004: (K&B 2004).
Keppel & Michaud 2012: (K&M 2012).
Michaud & Aynesworth 1983/2000: (M&A 1983/2000).
Winn & Merrill 1980: (W&M 1980).

Archives:

King County Archives: KCA.
Florida State Archives: FSA.
David Von Drehle Archives: DDA.

Reports:

State of Utah Adult Probation and Parole Presentence Investigation Report, March 22, 1975: (PIR 1975).
Ted Bundy Multiagency Investigative Team Report 1992: (MTR 1992).

Acronyms:

Prefrontal cortex: PFC.
Florida Department of Law Enforcement: FDLE.
Law School Admission Test: LSAT.
Registered Nurse: RN.
Tallahassee Police Department: TPD.
Violent Criminal Apprehension Program: ViCAP.

Place names

Florida State University: FSU.
University of Puget Sound: UPS.
Salt Lake City: SLC.

Miscellaneous:

[ref]: means a reference is needed.

Image copyright

The images in this book have been acquired from diverse sources, including the internet, book scans, eBooks, magazines, archives, photographers' personal collections, authors, newspapers and film media. In all relevant cases, a sincere attempt has been made to track down the copyright holder of the image; copyright permissions have been requested and money paid.

Not all copyrighted images could be tracked down. The provenance information of some images appears to have been lost or misplaced. If a copyright holder sees an image they think has not been properly credited in text, or if a copyright holder seeks financial reimbursement for an image that was originally for sale, then contact me via the address provided in the disclaimer section of this book. Hopefully a fair negotiation can be reached.

Ideally, in the good world, I would prefer that people feel they have paid me for the information I have structured and produced, not the images. This ideal has inspired a two-tiered business model. US\$9.99 for the 100 dpi resolution version and US\$29.99 for the 300 dpi resolution version. It is argued that if someone is prepared to pay 30 dollars for a good copy, then they are not going to pirate the images. If someone wishes to pirate the 100 dpi version, the original copyright holders can still sell high-resolution versions. It is additionally argued that the images contained in this book will actually promote sales of the works referenced herein.

In summary, it is hoped that readers will appreciate what a monumental task it is to gather so many images and organize them in the correct sequence. Taken from this perspective, the author would prefer the book to be received more as a public offering than an exercise to solely benefit himself. One way that this can happen is if a percentage of the money generated by this version goes out to the research assistants as points in the book (they also share some costs of course), and some of it is put aside for the 2nd edition, meaning that other people could join the team, invest a little, and improve the product and get some gain.

Contents

| | |
|-------------------------|-----|
| Abbreviations | 6 |
| Image copyright | 7 |
| Preface | 9 |
| Introduction | 14 |
| Childhood Years | 46 |
| Teenage Years | 58 |
| Young Adult Years | 68 |
| Adult Years | 92 |
| First Arrest | 239 |
| Escape | 269 |
| Second Arrest | 301 |
| Execution | 323 |
| Epilogue | 347 |
| Index | 369 |
| Appendix 1 | 384 |
| Appendix 2 | 408 |
| Book versions consulted | 429 |

Preface

This book is intended for mid- to high-level university students studying criminology and forensic psychology.

When I was studying psychology, we received a lecture on serial killers including Ted Bundy. I didn't know it then, but that lecture was somehow unsatisfactory, even if it might have sparked an interest in Bundy that I then forgot about. A lot of time passed, then I came upon Bundy again accidentally while researching Australian pathological killers for a historical project about the 1970s. I got interested in all things 70s and I inevitably bumped into Bundy again. This time I read a little more and I learned he spent time in Seattle. A friend of a friend lived there and I began to wonder if I should not learn more about Ted in Seattle. Pretty soon I got hooked. It was his monstrously inflated sense of self, that he was driven to seek out self-gratification at any expense, that intrigued me. He appeared to be very happy with his "achievements." We do not conceive of him as a person gripped by abject horror during the act of killing even as he goes on to kill anyway, a so-called split personality. No, Ted was high as a kite when he killed. Only afterwards, and only after the first kills did he feel any guilt and remorse. Except he soon stamped that out. What kind of consciousness would ever drive that kind of behavior?

I quickly ran into difficulties. I learned that childhood trauma and obsessional fantasies are often cited as causative factors. But I wasn't satisfied. It seems that those factors are necessary, but not sufficient. How did the violence start? How does a person break down their barriers of morality? Were they born that way, or were they self-made? So many questions.

This book is an attempt to unravel some of them, and revisit the university lecture I wished I had received. Accordingly, it is intended as a one-stop-shop for students to examine the life of Ted Bundy and discover for themselves the problem that he posed to society, namely: How do you know the person standing in front of you is the person they represent themselves to be? While this problem has existed ever since humanity became self-conscious and evolved civil societies, Ted in particular highlights this problem because he was the quintessential wolf in sheep's clothing of the modern era.

In studying Ted you will often hear the complaint, "Not enough about the victims, too much glorification of the killer."

This book does not glorify Ted. However, it does not pretend to answer the complaint, because the complaint is unrealistic. Firstly, most victims of Ted have barely more than a paragraph written about them in some form or another. Even if you cobbled together the thirty-six or so victims that Ted is claimed to have murdered you would not have enough to write a book. The only partial counter-example to this is Janice Ott and maybe the interviews of Belva Kent, Debbie Kent's mother. (Rhonda Stapley's 2016 the "second Ted survivor" stepping out of the closet is an autobiography, not a biography, and a dubious one at that.) Police unfortunately are reluctant to give up their inside files on Ted's victims. I have put as much as

feasibly possible about victims and their families in the timeline, but it is clearly insufficient. Secondly, most of the victims were snatched from life before they could become interesting people. It takes an entire life to build up the sufficient and necessary human complexity to become worthy of consideration to biographers. This is the cruel truth.

This does not automatically mean Ted is a worthy candidate for biographers. If anything, writing about Ted is a nasty and dirty business. There is hardly a single redeeming feature about him. It would serve biographers much better to write about the constructive and inspirational luminaries of this world.

Also, let us not pretend that writing about Ted will save the world. Even if we learned everything there is to learn about what makes serial murderers tick, that would not rid the world of these destructive deviants. The best thing that has come along to mitigate the problem is mobile devices and CCTV. Also, to a certain extent, the ViCAP system (Violent Criminal Apprehension Program in the United States and others like it around the world). ViCAP helps authorities coordinate their efforts to capture and prosecute these individuals. In Ted's time, none of these technologies existed. If Ted existed now, he wouldn't have gotten away with more than a few murders, at most.

What makes Ted an interesting study then, are not the sensational and macabre stories that swirl around him like so much detritus, but the little things, the small details that reveal something unexpected and surprising about him. In some cases, the details paint a more human picture of the man, not the 2-dimensional monster of our imaginations. From a neuroscientific perspective, we also want to know what drove Ted to do the things he did. The goal is to reverse engineer his brain to help us better understand how it gave rise to his particular cognition and behavior. Specifically, this means to not only open the black box on the dark and devious world of the homicidal necrophiliac, but take what we learn from that and apply it to humanity in general. In a very real sense, learning about deviant cognition & behavior teaches us more about the range and dynamics of consciousness itself. Some people—perhaps most—will conclude we ought to banish this type of behavior (if not cognition) from our species. We have no way of knowing what type of genetic makeup that would be, whether we would be fit to survive long-term as a species if that ever came about. Perhaps not all psychopathic and/or personality disorder traits are redundant.

Another aspect of this study is the appreciation of the historical context that Ted existed in. In particular, the physical space that he moved through. This book makes use of numerous maps at varying levels of detail, often historically accurate to the time. This allows readers to enter a kind of virtual yesteryear where they can imagine what happened and how it happened. In quite a few cases, this informed the speculations of myself and my two side-kicks (Chris Mortensen and Chuck Meeks) with a greater sense of practical reality. All too often our team encountered highly fantastical theories spun by police and lay people alike. The mapping work therefore serves as an antidote to these fantasies.

This leads to another important aspect of this book: accuracy. The general information about Ted is mostly consistent. While most approaches to Ted's life are

chronological, different people focus on different parts of his life depending on how much they know about that part. Also, biographers often put an image from one era of Ted's life next to a description of another part of his life. In other words, a mismatch between data and image. As you dig deeper, you find more instances of data that don't match up. One author says this, another says that. They can't both be right. In some film depictions, the locations, props, and dialogue are wrong and have been put out of sequence. This is because film is designed to rouse emotion more than reason. It is interesting that some writers attempt to tell Ted's story partly like a film.

This book levels the playing field because it provides a very comprehensive chronology of the most important events in Ted's life and if an image is found that links to that event, it is added to the story. Some of the images are era-correct. Some are modern day. Some are composites. There is a lot of variety. As you go through the timeline a new narrative forms in your head, slightly different one from the one that is available to date. Some parts are the same, but in other areas, new information and images opens the door to further speculation, sometimes a better understanding of what Ted may have done.

If by chance an entry in this book happens to contain an error, we hope to be notified so we can correct it for the next edition. We say this because this project has grown from its initial aim to something much bigger than a first edition alone could adequately encompass. Even as I write, new data is flowing in.

Robert A. Dielenberg (PhD Neuroscience)
May 27, 2016.
Newcastle
Australia

Preface to the updated edition

The pdf version of the “first edition” went out on May 10, 2016. This updated started development on June 1, 2016. It is now November 2, 2016, and the final draft of the updated pdf is nearing completion. A lot of time has been invested in maintaining facebook and gathering new data. We noted that a synergistic effect occurs between facebook and our own pro-active efforts. The usual pattern is we kick off with a topic, and facebook contributors respond. Sometimes a facebook individual pops up out of nowhere with an offer. Some of these individuals are time-wasters; some are curious and just want to throw stuff out there (some of their content is interesting, some inappropriate); and some have a genuine interest and want to contribute to the history. A select few of this last group has made it onto the contributor list.

New contributors (not limited to facebook)

Lyndon Priest: research into Ted’s VW.

Dave Woody: Susan Rancourt - CWU, Taylor Mountain, Issaquah maps.

Mike Dicianna: Kathy Parks - OSU documents and maps.

Marian Stauffer Fowden: a new timeline entry, placing Ted at a specific location at a specific time.

Spencer Wallace: additional photos of 4143 12th Ave N.E. Seattle, WA.

Drew Bales: Donna Manson - Evergreen State College campus photographs.

New historical data

Most of the historical data that has been added to this updated version has been initiated by myself and the tight-knit group of “free-lance research assistants” (as I like to call them). The following is a list of topics that we delved more deeply into:

- Utilization of more historical aerial maps. Part of our team effort is to create accurate historical maps of Ted activity. This is a complex undertaking, because it involves sourcing the correct latitude and longitude on the globe, and getting aerial photography as close to the key dates (1974-75), as possible.

- Gathering more historical images. Finding new photos of individuals and locations in the story. Chris Mortensen has done a terrific job covering the Salt Lake City area. Chuck Meeks has continued to lend his image analysis expertise. Dave Woody and Mike Dicianna, apart from contributing new material provided feed-

back on theories raised by the new data.

- Tables. I have made a big effort to tabulate patterns in Ted's behavior. The M.O. table reveals the way he acquired victims; the Abduction-Rape interval table provides insight into his timing, where we were able to derive some new ideas about how he went about his rape and murders.

- Chapter updates: a significant amount of new material and analysis has been added to the Adult chapter. Other chapters have also been modified, some with new material. Numerous corrections have been made throughout the book, from minor typos to major arguments. We have reversed our position on Ted holding live victims for extended periods of time. We believe Ted kept victims only as long as he feasibly could, which was usually limited to the secluded location where he murdered them. If Ted did stay with a victims for any extended period of time, it would be at these secluded locaitons and the hours would typically (but not always) be after midnight into the early morning hours. We have changed other things too, the astute reader will pick these up. One section of the Introduction, for example, has been re-written to clarify and expand on the analysis of Ted's brain.

- The epilogue has been mostly re-written to form a tighter conclusion for the book.

- Two new appendices have been added. The first is a portfolio of images that support chapters within the book. The second is a list of all the missing west coast girls for the period in question so that readers can determine for themselves how many people Ted might have been involved in.

Robert A. Dielenberg (PhD Neuroscience)
November 2, 2016.
Newcastle
Australia

Introduction

According to Bodiford, "He (Bundy) said *I passed a girl on the street. I had a feeling I had never had. I wanted to possess her — and he used the word 'possess' — by whatever means was necessary. I just had to have that girl.*"

- *St Petersburg Times*, July 23, 1979 -

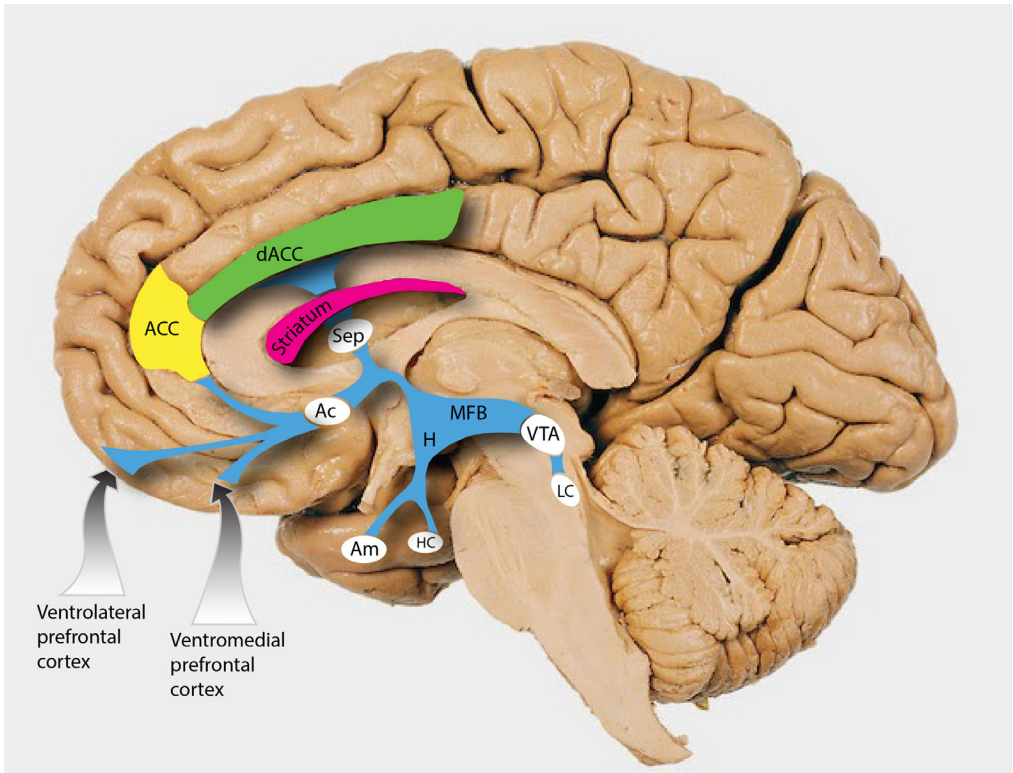
Questions

In delving into Ted Bundy, the most common questions asked are: How did he become a serial murderer? Why did he chose death over life, and how many people did he really murder?

To be honest, none of these questions will ever be satisfactorily answered. This book, however, has for the first time assembled pretty much everything of importance there is to know about Ted and has put those items into their correct sequence covering his life from cradle to grave. This gives us an unprecedented database from which to draw our inferences. If in the last analysis our inferences prove to be false, this is not due to our logic, but the validity of the available data. We have made the best effort to triple check our data; in more than a handful of cases, there are conflicts and contradictions. At all times original sources are given priority over hearsay and anecdotal evidence. But in some cases, hearsay and anecdotal evidence is all we have. In other cases, we have nothing at all; we have to interpolate, or extrapolate as the situation demands. In assessing these situations we ask the reader to test our speculations against the most probable, as opposed to automatically assuming the possible (and sometimes, the implausible).

The standard model of psychopathy

The standard model of psychopathy, as all scientific models, is an evolving construct. The history of its evolution is long and detailed, and we shall not explore it here. For our purposes, the modern concept of psychopathy evolved out of Hervey Cleckley's clinical descriptions, insights, and speculations which he detailed in *The Mask of Sanity* (1941/1976). Cleckley identified 16 distinct clinical criteria for a diagnosis of psychopathy, among them: hot-headed, manipulative, exploitive, irresponsible, self-centered, shallow, unable to bond, lacking in empathy or anxiety, likely to commit a wide variety of crimes, more violent, more likely to recidivate, and less likely to respond to treatment than other offenders (Tanay 2010, 127-8). Clinical instruments were subsequently developed, culminating in the all-pervasive Hare Psychopathy Checklist-Revised (PCL-R; Hare 1991). The PCL-R is comprised of four dimensions: *Interpersonal* (glibness/superficial charm, grandiose sense of self worth, pathological deception, conning/manipulative); *Affective* (lack of remorse or guilt, shallow affect, callous/lack of empathy, failure to accept responsibility for actions); *Lifestyle* (need for stimulation/proneness to boredom,



Primary brain areas discussed: ACC (anterior cingulate cortex); dACC (dorsal anterior cingulate cortex); Sep (septum); Ac (nucleus accumbans); MFB (medial forebrain bundle); H (hypothalamus); VTA (ventral tegmental area); Am (amygdala); HC (hippocampus); LC (Locus coeruleus). Brain image public domain.

parasitic lifestyle, lack of realistic long-term goals, impulsivity, irresponsibility); and *Antisocial* (poor behavioral controls, early behavior problems, juvenile delinquency, revocation of conditional release, criminal versatility). Two other items (promiscuous sexual behavior, many short-term relationships) do not load on any factor but contribute to the total PCL-R score.

This author is unaware whether the first version of the PCL was ever applied to Ted. However, Cleckley did assess Ted and found he was “capable of understanding the charges against him and of participating in his defense” (*Sarasota Herald-Tribune*, June 12, 1979). Ted opted not to use Cleckley’s assessment of himself in his defense, so we have no way of knowing what the details were, although we can imagine that Cleckley must have observed some signs in Ted’s character that loaded on dimensions later refined in the PCL-R. Note: Cleckley admitted his interview with Ted was far from comprehensive (Dorothy Lewis court transcript, December 15, 1987, p. 279, DDA). We could expand on the four dimensions of the PCL-R as it applies to Ted, but we will be taking a different tack and focus more on constructing a neurobehavioral model of Ted. In doing this, we hope to open the lid on a number of mysteries that are still very much in the air in explaining the

evidence he left behind, for which labelling him a psychopath serves as a signpost pointing toward what seems like an ever receding horizon. We hope to bring that horizon a little closer.

A neurobehavioral model of Ted

The discussion that follows focusses on three areas: the prefrontal cortex (PFC), the reward circuit (ventral tegmental area, medial forebrain bundle, nucleus accumbens, amygdala), and the insular cortex (anterior and dorsal anterior aspects). Each of these areas in Ted's brain was perturbed – either through genetics, epigenetics or intrauterine influences, or conditioning (both willfully and through unconditioned environmental influences).

After drawing together evidence spanning Ted's entire life, we have come to the conclusion that Ted's primary problem was a developmental disorder of the prefrontal cortex (PFC). Developmental disorders cover a wide range of expression, including among others, autistic spectrum disorders, antisocial behavior, schizophrenia and Attention Deficit Hyperactivity Disorder (ADHD). PFC disorders are the most difficult to diagnose when they are borderline symptomatic as was in Ted's case.

The prefrontal cortex (PFC)

In laymen's terms, the PFC is the seat of the soul and creativity. In neuroscientific terms it is defined as the executive center of the brain (Fuster 2001; Goldman-Rakic et al 1996). Its principal function is the temporal organization of actions towards biological or cognitive goals (Luria 1966; Fuster 1997). Higher order control rather than more specific abilities such as spatial cognition and theory of mind (see "empathy" below) has been proposed as the core trait selected during evolution (Christensen 2007), and the PFC is the area of the brain that has benefited most from this development. To execute control, the PFC essentially functions as a comparator and bias generator.

Broadly speaking, the PFC can be divided into two areas: medial and lateral. Medial portions have reciprocal connections with brain regions that are implicated in emotional processing (amygdala), memory (hippocampus), and higher-order sensory regions (temporal cortex). Lateral portions have reciprocal connections with brain regions that are implicated in motor control (basal ganglia, premotor cortex, supplementary motor area), performance monitoring (cingulate cortex), and higher-order sensory processing (association areas, parietal cortex). In addition to this, the medial and lateral aspects of the PFC are reciprocally connected to each other allowing for information exchange and integration of their broader connections (Grossmann 2013). Because of the diffuse interconnectivity of the PFC, it is able to compare inputs from diverse regions of the brain and then send back bias signals to those areas that then influence further processing in those areas. This enables it to establish the proper mappings between inputs, internal states, and outputs needed to perform a given task. However, even though the PFC is mas-

sively parallel in its connectivity, it operates serially. The cost of operating serially is high. Recent research has shown that, contrary to popular belief, humans regularly “goof off” which in operational terms is the PFC going off-line to conserve and consolidate the energy needed for serial processing. This is known as the *default mode network* theory (Raichle et al 2001). Since the PFC has diverse connections to most parts of the brain, even the slightest perturbation of its operation can lead to behavioral symptoms in other parts of the brain which are often mistakenly interpreted as mental disorders in their own right (Coolidge et al 2004).

What kind of developmental disorder did Ted have?

It appears Ted suffered from what can be loosely described as *stress-induced PFC decompensation*. “Decompensation” normally refers to a functional overload of an organ due to fatigue, stress, illness or old age. Applied to the PFC, it means the same thing. Under minimal load, Ted’s PFC was able to operate normally. He was able to distribute his energy to working memory and sequential tasks in an effective and timely manner. However, compared to normal individuals, whose PFC had fully matured and established the necessary connections needed to sustain functional operation, Ted’s PFC was somewhat compromised in its connectivity and therefore required a greater amount of energy to perform comparable work vis-a-vis his peers for social processing tasks. Here, an important concept enters the story: *ego-depletion*. The theory states that the PFC has a finite amount of energy to perform serial tasks (Baumeister et al 2000). Over the course of the day, this energy dissipates. Sleep is an important restorative factor, whereupon a person is able to wake up fresh and start the day over. However, a person with compromised functional connectivity of the PFC can succumb to ego-depletion more easily and this can lead to decompensation, which in turn precipitates a *regression* in behavior. At its most subtle, in normal people this might express as the feeling of “I need to reward myself” which usually means consuming fat, sugar, nicotine and alcohol, or it might express as a sudden explosive burst of anger such as road rage. In Ted, however, it was more specific. As he put it:

You take the individual we’re talking about—a unique personality with certain defects, if you will—and then you subject him to stress. Stress happens to come up randomly, but its effect on the person is not random; it’s specific. That results in a certain amount of chaos, confusion, and frustration. That person begins to seek out a target for his frustrations (M&A 2000, 69).

It was when Ted’s ego was depleted that he was particularly vulnerable to triggering stimuli, things that would set him off in search of a means to replenish himself. Depletion cannot be depicted as depression. But because depletion-replenishment occurs in a cyclic manner (due to the natural pattern of life stressors), it can take on the appearance of mood swings, which led psychiatrist Dorothy Otnow Lewis to theorize that Ted suffered from bipolar disorder. However, Ted knew better:

... ‘mood swings’ isn’t accurate. It’s just changes. It’s harder than hell to describe, but all I want to do is lay (sic) around. I’m not motivated to do anything! I just consume huge volumes of time, really, without doing anything. I’m not particularly depressed. There’s just no momentum. There’s no desire to do anything. It’s just blaaaah! It cannot be characterized by depression or deep sadness (M&A 2000, 26).

No human is immune to ego-depletion, but Ted was particularly vulnerable to it because of his PFC deficit. The key concept here is that ego resources do not get used up just through serial tasks but also through emotional insults. When the integration function is sub-optimal, as was in Ted’s case, not only does it incur a higher energy cost to integrate content, but it also incurs more energy wastage through inefficient processing. This invariably leads to “chaos, confusion, and frustration.”

What evidence do we have for Ted’s developmental disorder?

As in all cases of developmental disorders, researchers look to genetic inheritance. Lewis found that Ted’s grandfather, Samuel Cowell “spoke aloud to unseen presences” (Nelson 1994, 154). This is very suggestive of schizophrenic-like behavior. Apparently, Sam Cowell was also a violent and frightening man. According to Ted’s aunt Virginia “Ginny” Bristol, his family and employees feared and hated him. His brothers even “wanted to kill him” (Brennan 1989). Under duress of Ted’s impending execution, Ted’s mother Louise Cowell admitted that “... her father had been violent and probably beat her mother” (Nelson 1994, 158). Eleanor Cowell, Ted’s grandmother, had been diagnosed with agitated depression (suggestive of manic episodes) and incorrectly received shock therapy (M&A 1983, 314). These clues point toward inappropriate acting out, possible schizophrenia and bipolar disorder in the family. There is also the implication that deleterious inherited genes may have skipped a generation as there is no reported evidence that Ted’s mother Louise or her sisters ever suffered from neurobehavioral problems.

The second clue in support of Ted’s developmental disorder is Michaud & Aynsworth’s observation that Ted was a case of arrested development:

From all that he said and all that we now knew about his past, he might as well have been a twelve-year-old. His apparent emotional retardation resulted in a diseased pre-adolescent mind directing the actions of an adult male body (M&A 1983, 17).

Our third clue comes from Polly Nelson who acted as Ted’s defence lawyer during the last three years of his life. In her book *Defending the Devil* she writes:

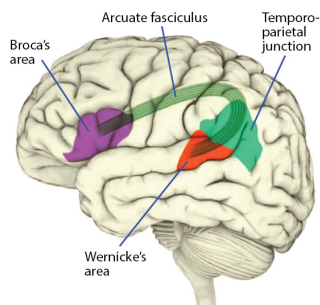
Ted had real deficits in judgment, awareness, and deeper thinking. He could talk and write, but he couldn’t comprehend or respond. [...] He was incapable of independent thought or elaboration. If I probed his statements, he was unable to explain himself or take an idea deeper (Nelson 1994, 61).

Finally, and perhaps most poignantly, we have Ted’s own account:

In junior high school, everything was fine. Nothing that I can recall happened that summer before my sophomore year to stunt me, or otherwise hinder my progress. But I got to high school and I didn't make any progress. How can I say it? I'm at a loss to describe it even now. Maybe I didn't have the role models at home that could have aided me in school. I don't know. But I felt alienated from my old friends. They just seemed to move on, and I didn't, I don't know why, and I don't know if there is an explanation. Maybe it's something that was programmed by some kind of genetic thing. In my early schooling, it seemed like there was no problem in learning what the appropriate social behaviors were. It just seemed like I hit a wall in high school (M&A 1983, 58).

All of these clues invariably point to a developmental disorder of the PFC. Of particular note to our theory is that the PFC is one of the last cortical regions to undergo full myelination during adolescence in humans (Fuster 1997). It would seem that Ted's inkling that he was genetically programmed to stop developing in his teens has some basis in fact. The pre-adolescent brain has a chaotic proliferation of neural connections in the PFC. As the brain matures, connections in the PFC undergo *differential myelination*. Connections that supported childish behavior and their emotional reactions get pruned, while connections that support mature socialization (learning the adult world of social rules, reciprocation) become more myelinated; they develop long-term arteries of information flow ending in finely fenestrated river deltas of inter-connection at their termini. A recent finding demonstrated that versions of a gene within the major histocompatibility complex (MHC) called complement component 4 (C4), helps control synaptic pruning (Sekar et al 2016). Too much C4 can cause excessive pruning. A surplus of synaptic pruning, particularly during adolescence, could disrupt elaborate neural connections needed for proper socialization – effectively lead to insufficient development of those river deltas.

Meanwhile, as Ted was having this brain problem, the other parts of his body matured normally; he was becoming a young adult. The failure of Ted's PFC to mature, to cross-link and reach all the important parts of his brain, meant that he was in effect a child trapped in an adult's body. We hear the same story repeated time and time again: that Ted loved sneaking out from behind bushes and other hiding places to scare women. A kind of child's hide-and-seek, but with sinister trapings. There are many other examples of Ted's childishness that can be found in the timeline. Paradoxically, children are good at acquiring "dots," but they haven't got the adult perspective to join those dots together to form a cohesive narrative that adults are capable of (even if sometimes there are mysteries in life). A normal mature adult has the ability to hold a bird's eye view of a problem, but then additionally zoom down to the level of individual trees. A child by analogy stands at the base of large trees in the forest looking up through the canopy, but is unable to soar above the forest and look down on it and see the "big picture." Children live at the level where everything is still local detail but with little awareness of how all the localities interrelate. As a result, they are fantastic at collecting things, a skill they get better at as they grow older—and which can give them the outer appearance of



The primary language centers linked by the arcuate fasciculus.

maturity—but this is exposed as soon as their cognitive ability is comprehensively challenged. While Ted had the cunning of a child to evade authorities when he was free, once he was apprehended his inability to see the big picture is revealed as a common pattern in his behavior.

Inner speech and “voices”

In analyzing Ted, we have to acknowledge that he had a mind like us, with thoughts, memories and emotions. And like all of us, he had *inner speech*. Inner speech is most commonly experienced by the person as speaking in his or her own naturally inflected voice but with no sound being produced (Hurlburt et al 2013). Inner speech is distinct from hearing voices; the latter is referred to as *auditory hallucinations*. Inner speech has been found to consistently activate brain regions that subserve speech production such as the medial PFC and left inferior frontal gyrus (McGuire et al 1996). Inner speech occupies a significant amount of our conscious experience (both waking and sleep). The case of Jill Bolte Taylor, however, provides a dramatic example of what happens when it shuts down (Taylor 2008). Following a stroke she lost conscious awareness of her inner speech:

Without a language center telling me: ‘I am Dr. Jill Bolte Taylor. I am a neuroanatomist. I live at this address and can be reached at this phone number,’ I felt no obligation to being her anymore. It was truly a bizarre shift in perception, but without her emotional circuitry reminding me of her likes and dislikes, of her ego center reminding me about her patterns of critical judgment, I didn’t think like her anymore (Taylor 2008, 67–8).

This passage suggests that inner speech may play an important role in constructing the experience of self-identity. It has even been argued that Dr. Taylor lost consciousness of her self-identity *because* she lost her inner speech (Morin 2009). Because Taylor’s PFC was still functional after her stroke, it appears that her awareness of her own inner speech did not fail because her PFC failed, rather, she lost awareness of her inner speech because the language centers of her brain were silenced after the stroke. This is important for our discussion, because it shows that awareness of inner speech can be decoupled from its production, something one would expect with a prefrontal cortical model which acts as the executive center of the brain. [Note, the other important part is the thalamo-cortical loop, which acts as a gearbox between the PFC and the other parts of the brain.] Other parts of the brain and body can be damaged, but so long as there is no damage to the PFC, a person has a reasonable chance of recovery. In stark contrast to this, when the PFC itself is damaged, there is very little that can be done to fix it.

Thought insertion

For the average person who does not suffer from major thought distortions, inner speech tends towards cohesion. This is to say, it is experienced as belonging to oneself; it is not normally experienced as alien or “other.” Given this state of affairs one can imagine how frightening it must be to hear voices that are experienced as not belonging to oneself. This is referred to as *thought insertion* (Schneider 1959). There are two types of experience at this level: internalized and externalized. The externalized type is experienced as auditory hallucinations. The internalized is harder to identify. In internalized thought insertion, the individual hears the voices as coming from inside their own head (but disowns them). This type of experience is more typical for Obsessive Compulsive Disorder (OCD). True schizophrenics, by comparison, ordinarily experience voices as an externalized phenomenon, as coming from outside their body and somewhere in the near vicinity. Hence the association with hallucinations. The experience is complicated by the fact that embodiment itself is not completely cut-and-dried. Even though our body boundaries are circumscribed by our skin, our sense of self can extend across those boundaries into the objects we interact with (Clark & Chalmers 1998). Our sense of self can also be “leaky,” in that we can never be completely sure that the totality of our selves always remains within the boundary of our bodies. For example, we can sometimes give away what we are thinking through facial expressions and body language. High speed cameras these days pick up micro-expressions. Technology can also peer into our brains via electroencephalography (EEG) or brain scans. The embodiment problem therefore complicates anything we might say about voices, and we have to be careful not to box schizophrenics in on the issue of externalization. What is external to one individual may not be so clearly demarcated in another individual. Moreover, as the schizophrenic grows accustomed to their voices, their character and locus may shift.

The core issue of thought insertion, of course, is the mysterious process where the normally cohesive stream of inner speech suddenly and inexplicably splits into two streams; the original and the “other.” To date, no one has actually provided a convincing explanation for how this happens, or indeed, if it happens at all (Merkelbach et al 2002). Intuitively, there appears to be a dissociation, however, it may be that nothing is actually dissociated. It may be that what has changed is the individual’s perspective of their inner speech. It may be that inserted thoughts are created by the self, but due to some sort of self-monitoring failure are perceived as coming from an other self. In one theory, self-monitoring is intimately linked to predictive states and comparator functions (Frith et al 2000; Jones & Fernyhough 2007; Seal et al 2004)*. The attractiveness of this theory is that it has generalizability. It appeals to the notion that our brain acts in some ways like a virtual reality machine, that it generates goals for which it predicts outcomes, assesses those outcomes and uses that information to make guidance corrections on current behavior or the next iteration of some planned behavior. If the comparator is not provided with a prediction, or if it is provided with one but the outcome is so bizarre that it falls outside the realm of expectation, or if the comparator itself has

* This is only one theory among several we have chosen as consistent with our model.

a fault, any or all of these failures can produce a mismatch between a person's self-concept and their ongoing experience. Admittedly "self-concept" is still something of a mystery, but here it is used to mean the narrative a person produces to explain oneself to *oneself and to others*, which has a past that can't be changed, a present which is sometimes changeable, and a future that assumes the best but doesn't always work out. We can relate to this admittedly circular but simple definition because we understand that people who suffer from depression often don't like their past, feel powerless to change the present, and expect the worst of the future.

Currently, there appears to be an increasing acceptance of the idea that we are composed of multiple selves, each with its own mode of existence contingent upon context. So for example, a father can be a good parent at home with his wife and children, but then frequent prostitutes whom he treats as second-class citizens. What this illustrates, however, is that the self is modal; it doesn't prove the self is divided. By "modal" we mean rather than fragmenting into separate selves, the self is able to develop specialized role identities (Donahue et al 1993).

Having said this, there is evidence that supports some sort of *compartmentalization* of the self. This is because the brain is fundamentally a hybridized entity, with some areas that specialize and other areas that generalize. The specialized areas are often deeper within the brain (or lower in the hierarchy), have specific connections, and support innate behaviors, whereas the generalized areas are situated in the neocortex, have more diffuse connections to widespread parts of the brain, and support higher level integration of information. It is not possible for higher cortical areas to access all deeper specialized area, leading to an abrupt transition from conscious to unconscious processing. As mentioned earlier, the brain basically operates in parallel fashion (because of its simultaneous multiple connections), but self-monitoring is limited to serial operation. It seems to act like a searchlight, casting its beam on a narrow area during focussed cognition, but spreads out like moonlight during non-focussed tasks. However, because of the abrupt transition between the conscious and unconscious, there are still many areas that cannot be cross-accessed, leading to some parts of the brain operating relatively independent of one another.

In the strictest sense, compartmentalization can lead to individuals holding totally contradictory attitudes. In the more general sense, every human is doomed to some degree of compartmentalization throughout their life because the self is fundamentally a finite construct. We can never become all-aware (the myth of enlightened beings is just that, a myth). However, even though many processes operate independent of one another, a proportion of them can reach the light of consciousness through willful effort – or, according to one theory, through faulty *gating* of the PFC. The latter could account for thought insertion. Under normal conditions, when the gating mechanism operates properly, there is no problem. In other cases, when it is put under stress, or if it has an intermittent fault, then content from previously unaccessed areas of the brain could potentially "leak" into the field of consciousness and disturb the individual (Shimamura 2000).

The intuitive appeal of this model is that often those contents that do leak into conscious awareness are usually fragmentary or not fully formed, suggesting that

they indeed originate from parts of the brain that process ongoing experience unconsciously in episodic fashion and have stored the fragmented results in memory in distributed locations. Therefore, more often than not it is up to the conscious function to try and make sense of these fragments, which it often initially fails to do, but over time may grow accustomed to and develop its own weird interpretation of. This in turn can become a *cause* of new behavior as the person integrates these fragments with their inner speech.

What evidence do we have that Ted experienced thought insertion?

The main, but not only, source of information about Ted's voice is Polly Nelson's *Defending the Devil*. Nelson and Lewis visited Ted the day before his execution and conducted one final interview (note: Ted's attorney Jim Coleman was responsible for getting him to speak to Lewis in his final days). The story unfolds after Lewis expressed the firm opinion that with only a day left to live Ted needed to be real, not waste time performing a charade by claiming incompetency. Lewis had re-read Michaud & Aynesworth's *The Only Living Witness* on the plane on the way down to Florida State Prison, and broke the discussion open with a direct question about the "entity," fishing as it were, for a Multiple Personality Disorder diagnosis (MPD; note currently referred to as Dissociative Identity Disorder). Ted deflects Lewis' "imaginary companion" telling her Michaud & Aynesworth's entity was somewhat different in his estimation. Right from the start, Ted is at pains to formulate an explanation of himself in the best terms he is capable of. It is as much an intellectual exercise as a cathartic release for him.

Ted begins by saying: "A portion of my personality was not fully – it began to emerge ..." (Nelson 1994, 276). What he is telling us is that he conceived of himself as whole, to which new elements were added. The essence of these new elements, of course, was the rapist-killer. "In my high school years ... I would fantasize about coming up to some girl sunbathing in the woods" This little ditty about the bikini girl in the woods was something Ted came back to time and time again. Particularly the woods. Ted loved the woods. He'd prance around them naked and masturbate. We know that the nascent voyeur was already there, because he described looking out of his upper bedroom window down into the neighbor's bathroom, where we are invited to imagine the neighbor's daughter undressing

So Ted was actively into fantasy before his teens. He probably discovered masturbation to ejaculation in his very early teens, so he almost certainly masturbated to the neighbor's daughter (and his own maturing half-sisters most likely). Was Ted over-sexed? According to one report he was a compulsive masturbator (MacPherson 1989, 190). But in other ways he was a normal teenager, except his fantasies increasingly became macabre. When he said he fantasized about coming up to some girl, he meant by surprise, to gain control over her and rape her. This theme runs through Ted's life like Ariadne's thread. The surprise attack was the core element of his M.O. – as he got more sophisticated, he tried various ruses, but always behind it was the surprise.

Ted then goes on to explain that in his mid-teens, he began to get interested in

morbid things, like dead bodies in detective magazines. What drew him to death is a mystery; it may have started out as an innocent curiosity, since normal people also get drawn to images of carnage and mutilation. What separates Ted from normal people however, is he may have also masturbated to these images (although he denied doing that). At the same time, he was looking for books in the library that had descriptions of sexual activity. So we get the first hint that he is beginning to fuse sex-and-violence with the orgasm.

Meanwhile, Lewis presses Ted to tell her more about the entity. A somewhat amateur move, revealing a hint of desperation, as if this was the only way to trick Ted into talking. If she listened to Ted, she might have got him to describe an image from one of those magazines he was talking about – describe it in as much detail as possible, because Ted would have been talking about something he didn't create and therefore would have been relatively objective and we'd get our first glimpse of a *specific* image that influenced him (we can generalize from the archives what he may have got into, but we have no specific images to work from). In that sense, Lewis missed an opportunity.

Then came the big high, his obsession with Diane Edwards in 1967 that ended in failure when he bombed out of Chinese and was dropped by Diane for not being mature enough, not man enough (no doubt this was also a class struggle, in that Ted was also not rich enough for her either). Shortly afterwards he admits to having passive rape fantasies involving her, where he watches someone else doing it. There is a sense of disingenuity here, but we have to take it for what it is. Ted then goes on to talk about the sequence of events leading to his first murder, possibly that of Kerry May Hardy on June 1, 1972. At this point, Lewis pursues her MPD theory again:

Lewis: Did you ever have a sense of another Ted, or another person? Did you ever actually talk to the other?

Ted: Oh, yes. In fact – oh, yes – I'd have this dialogue.

Lewis: I don't mean thinking, "gee, you're nuts to do this." I mean, did you ever feel like another person? [Lewis here is starting to sound like a cracked record. Her line of questioning is most unhelpful and in fact biases Ted to produce interpretations of his voice that favors her interpretation.]

Ted: It reached a point, I would say in '74, where ... it would have conversations. And I'm not saying I was a multiple personality. I don't know. All I know is that this other part of myself seemed to have a voice, and seemed to have a need (Nelson 1994, 284-5).

Ted goes on to say that the voice became particularly strong when he was intoxicated. It worked like a steam kettle whistle. There was a "force which energized" the entity inside him. It had to be expended. Once it receded, the other normal part of his self could take the forefront again. Lewis continues to press forward and Ted replies: "I know there was this kind of dialogue going on, not just talking to myself innocently. Really a '*Give in to me*' kind of thing." After some more probing, Lewis comes up with a statement that reveals the key criteria for her theory:

Lewis: Have you ever been told that you did something you don't remember? The reason I'm asking is that I am wondering, because you raised the issue of multiple personality, to what extent are you, who I'm talking to now, really separate from the other entity, and to what extent it's just a variant of a mood you get.

Ted: Yeah. I hear what you're saying. I think that there's more, an integration there, an interrelationship, which when the malignant portion of my personality or consciousness, call it what you will—the entity—is more or less directing the mood and the action, I'm still on another level conscious of this, I'm not totally unconscious of, or unaware of it (Nelson 1994, 287; punctuation modified).

In fact, Lewis was the one pursuing the MPD diagnosis; Ted only raised it in response to her leading questions. Lewis seems to think she can make Ted own the disorder, but he deftly quashes that idea. The issue of the “voice” therefore is not whether he was a divided self; he was not. It is about how his PFC might have failed in some way allowing previously inhibited material to enter his field of conscious awareness.

What evidence do we have of faulty gating in Ted's PFC?

Bundy: _____ There were times years ago, ah, _____ times
that someone would say Boo and I would fall to pieces.

(Pensacola Police Department “bug” tape, February 20, 1978)

One region of the PFC that is particularly relevant for our discussion is the orbitofrontal cortex (in our first diagram the ventromedial PFC). Damage to the orbitofrontal cortex results in socio-emotional deficits, including emotional outbursts, impulsivity, risk-taking, difficulty with goal-directed behavior, and a failure to abide by social rules and norms (e.g., Bechara et al 2000). Obviously these examples are at the extreme end of the scale. Ted didn't suffer trauma; his deficit was developmental and therefore much more subtle. Interestingly, psychiatrists and psychologists mostly deferred their diagnosis of him, ostensibly due to this subtlety. They also had a hard time extracting anything more than generalities out of him, which was just as much a function of his passive aggressive behavior in the face of authority as his inherent superficiality. Another problem for psychiatrists and psychologists was that they did not observe Ted while he was under extreme duress. Their tests were conducted in a controlled environment and followed a protocol that fostered cooperation and prevented confrontation. This played directly into Ted's hand because under those conditions his PFC could function relatively normally.

As a comparator and bias generator, the PFC needs to effectively gate emotional responses which would otherwise perturb the system. Based on this definition:

It is of interest that the defendant displayed marked signs of hostility when asked about his early childhood. Specifically, when he was asked about his “real father's whereabouts,” his face became quite contorted and reddened and he paused mo-

mentarily. He then gained composure and replied rather succinctly and appropriately: “You might say that he left my mother and me and never rejoined the family” (PIR 1975).

The interviewer inadvertently put Ted in a situation where his PFC gating mechanism was put under stress. The result was that previously compartmentalized emotional content flooded his field of conscious awareness. For a brief moment, the interviewer saw a part of Ted that he normally kept hidden. However, because Ted was in a controlled environment he was able to regain his composure. But suppose this had happened in an uncontrolled environment? How would he have dealt with the situation then? Our prediction is that it would have depleted some of his ego resources. This in turn would have initiated a PFC decompensation event leading to further ego-depletion. While in this state he would have been highly vulnerable to ...

... all kinds of triggers, internal triggers, external triggers. I mean, sometimes, sometimes just the sight of a particularly attractive young woman, or sometimes it would be something I'd read or seen in a magazine or on TV. And sometimes it would be spontaneous, just feel like I've got to go out now and start looking for something [...] In fact, what would happen would be a series of downs and disappointments together with one of these triggers ... (Nelson 1994, 289-90).

Ted's last observation, that it would happen after “a series of downs and disappointments” invariably led him to act out premeditated *displaced aggression* (Geberth 1990; email to author January 11, 2016). In other words, actively find a target to vent his frustration and anger on. No matter what that victim did, comply or not comply, Ted would make sure to find an excuse to exact his punishment.

The role of cannabis and alcohol

Ted repeatedly stressed to anyone who cared to listen that alcohol played a crucial role as a disinhibitor prior to the commission of his crimes. He said that it helped steady his nerves. He also admitted to regular cannabis use. However, he never once associated cannabis with his “problem.” Here we aim to show that it was integral to his problem, may have in fact precipitated it, and served as a powerful facilitator in the elaboration of his fantasies. It is not our aim to demonize cannabis. It has beneficial as well as detrimental effects. Its effects also heavily depend on individual differences and vulnerabilities.

The first reference we have of Ted using cannabis is April 1968, when he worked at the Queen Ann Hill Safeway in Seattle and lived for a short time with a thief and drug user (Kendall 1981, 34). He was 21 going on 22. Was this the first time Ted used cannabis? Probably not. It was the late 60s, Washington State was deeply steeped in the counter-culture movement as was its neighboring southern west-coast states. Interestingly, Ted distanced himself from the counter-culture movement. Rather than rock'n'roll, he preferred classical music. He also offered to spy on student dissidents. Nevertheless, there is an enigmatic clue contemporary to

this period of his life. According to an un-named “intimate” friend of Ted’s who wanted the story told:

Ted believed that he was demonically possessed. It began in college. He called it ‘the Beast.’ It was not your typical demon. It spoke to him, but it had no human emotion, no conscience. At first, he was afraid. The demon was totally contrary to his make-up. But then he conditioned himself to it and got so he could tolerate it. Finally, Ted gave himself over. He joined the demon and got to like pornography. He believed that other serial killers were also possessed. He struggled with the demonic influence, marked by lust and feelings of violence, even in prison. But through prayer and reading God’s word, he subdued the demon somewhat. However, he never felt that the Beast ever left him entirely (Nobile 1989, 45).

Putting aside theological connotations, the key line is: “It began in college.” This could mean University of Puget Sound, or it could mean University of Washington. It could mean Stanford, California. It could mean Temple University, Philadelphia. It’s hard to say where college ends and “university” begins. If you count his second stint at University of Washington, the “college” years span from September 1965 - June 1972, with a Bachelor of Science (psychology) course started in January 1971. Somehow Ted crammed a 2-year course into 1.5 years. We assume he was able to do this because he was motivated to find out about his “problem” (he would later say psychology didn’t help). So maybe we can exclude “college” during his second stint. In which case we can assume his earlier years were from 19 to 21. This would place the emergence of the “Beast” around this time, or who knows, maybe even earlier.

Cannabis is a well-known precipitator of psychosis in vulnerable individuals (e.g., Arendt et al 2008). The core symptom is auditory hallucinations. Paranoia is also common. The active ingredient of cannabis, $\Delta 9$ -tetrahydrocannabinol (THC), has been shown to increase activity in the PFC, but lower activity in the striatum, leading to aberrant salience attribution (Bhattacharyya et al 2012). The mechanism of action is dysregulation of the neurotransmitter dopamine. Salience attribution is the process whereby the brain engages in increased cue reactivity to certain stimuli compared to others. There is strong evidence that dopamine is critical in producing the motivation of “wanting” something (as opposed to “liking” or “learning” something) (Berridge 2007). Disruption of the PFC-striatal network via drugs can lead to wanting something more than normal by sensitizing networks responsible for stimulus associations. In practical terms, if Ted was masturbating to concurrent pictures of cheerleaders and dead bodies while high on cannabis, he would not only increase his wanting of them, but draw them into a tighter associational relationship. But that is not the real kicker. The problem is that THC increases activity in the PFC, leading to more integrated cognitive processes, something that is desirable *in-and-of-itself* for someone who normally experiences sub-optimal neural integration of the PFC. However, this is at the expense of disruption of PFC gating. In other words, the gain is a more interconnected thought process but at the expense of increased intrusion of memory fragments that are normally compartmentalized. This is then exacerbated by alcohol, which causes further disinhi-

bition of the PFC. Ted's use of these two drugs in conjunction with his vulnerability and conditioning turned him into time-bomb.

Addiction

It has often been said that Ted was addicted to killing. In the last days of his life he tried to stress the importance of hardcore violent pornography as a major contributor to the genesis of his problem. Pornography, of course, was just a facilitator for his masturbation fantasies. It would be more appropriate to say he was addicted to masturbation, of which pornography and killing became an extension. A recent study has shown that addiction is generic. It doesn't choose type; the brains of addicts, no matter what type, appear to look the same. This has been verified in a study comparing the brains of people who engage in compulsive sexual behavior with those of normal individuals (Voon et al 2014). Sex addicts showed increased activity in the dorsal anterior cingulate, ventral striatum and amygdala, three key regions associated with the brain's reward circuit and addictive behavior. The paradox of the addict is not the imbibing behavior itself, but the approach behavior to the addictive substance, the wilfully placing of themselves in situations where they know they will encounter a triggering stimulus. They continue to do this long after the behavior has lost its hedonic value and has become self-destructive. It appears that the anticipation of the event before it happens charges up the system with nervous energy, a state which is desirable in itself because it replaces the boredom and frustration that preceded it. Ted knew this well. The anticipation was the best part! He even went so far as to say that the "... fantasy that accompanies and generates ... the anticipation that precedes the crime is always more stimulating than the immediate aftermath of the crime itself" (M&A 2000, 84). This accords well with Robinson & Berridge's incentive sensitization theory of addiction which posits a dissociation between wanting and liking (Robinson & Berridge 2008). Voon's study also supports this where she found compulsive sex addicts displayed increased desire when shown sexually explicit images, but registered the same levels of liking as shown by normals. A two-speed neural economy appears to have been instantiated in the addict's brain. When they encounter their target stimulus, their desire increases, but cognitively they do not feel more excited. The picture we form is of a person having sex because they want it, but they do not feel like they are getting a great deal of pleasure out of it. Maybe that is why Ted referred to the sex part as "obligatory."

Why did Ted become addicted to sex and violence? There is no clear answer to this question. Some would argue he was born that way; others believe he learned it. The truth probably lies somewhere in between. Notwithstanding, we have one piece of anecdotal evidence that allows us to at least speculate on a mechanism. The theory rests on the generally accepted observation that children before the age of five are highly susceptible to imprinting. In Ted's case, there is a report that as a *four year-old* he perused his grandfather's stash of porn in the old man's garden shed (a claim we have no way of verifying). If true, this may have potentiated two consequences: increased cue reactivity (more sensitivity to sexual triggers

in the environment); and stimulus habituation (the addict seeks out increasingly more explicit content compared to age-matched peers because they have become habituated to less explicit content). We have ample evidence that Ted did have heightened cue reactivity to sexual stimuli in the environment – he said so himself. We also have one anecdotal report supporting habituation. Sometime during his preteens, Ted showed one of his friends a photo of a man and woman performing oral sex (Morris 2013, 83-4). The friend claimed to be shocked. When asked where he found it Ted lied and said he found it on the sidewalk. Whether just a rumor or true, it illustrates that Ted at the time seems to have had more exposure to sexually explicit content compared to his age-matched peers, and suggests that he had already undergone a degree of habituation to such content.

Fantasy

So much has been written about the role of fantasy in the genesis of serial killer behavior that we will not repeat it here (e.g., see Geberth 1990; Carlisle 1993; Carlisle 2013). What is more interesting for us is: why did Ted reify his fantasies? That is, take the fantasy out of his head and project it onto the world. The short answer is that humans have done this ever since they had the spark of self-awareness. However, in civilized societies people don't go around willy-nilly projecting their murderous fantasies onto innocent victims. They might let their frustrations out via displaced aggression onto their dog, or simply dissipate it in an alcoholic haze. But for Ted that was not enough. Something drove him to cross the line.

The remarkable thing is that it took a great deal of planning and effort. Ted didn't just wake up one day and kill. He worked his way toward it step-by-step, as methodical as someone learning a musical instrument or a new language. For someone who supposedly had a developmental disorder of the PFC, which implies a person that has sub-optimal stamina and endurance, this is not only remarkable, but contradictory. The answer to this conundrum may be addiction to various risk-taking behaviors that excite. This pattern is intensified by cannabis and released by alcohol. More specifically, cannabis allowed Ted to elaborate his fantasies to a greater level of intensity than normal, particularly visual and auditory stimuli. It doesn't explain why Ted crossed the line. But it is well-known that animals and humans alike are prepared to work hard for highly salient rewards such as drugs and sex. When they are combined, as in Ted's case, and with his vulnerability, they provide ample attractive value, giving him a context that focussed his mind. This was a process that could be enjoyed in-and-of-itself, a feeling that everything was coming together, leading to sustained sequences of behavior: "... when I was really going all out and took my time, yeah, ..." as Ted described it to Robert D. Keppel a couple of days before his execution on January 24, 1989.

As for why Ted crossed the line, we have two plausible and inter-related possibilities: the first is that masturbation only took him so far; the second is habituation. In Ted's own words:

I don't like some of the, some of the things I've done and that uh, that I don't like it,

but yet I do it. And, as I say, uh, I've searched around inside before. And I talked to Joe [Aloi] about some things today. About a process that I went through and, and that the process of conditioning, so to speak, self conditioning and I thought there was a time when I could counter condition myself, desensitize myself. See, I made myself the way I was. I uh, I mean bit-by-bit and step-by-step and day-by-day. I don't know why, I don't know what spurred me on to do it. You see, I, there was a time, way back, when I felt deep, deep guilt about even the very thought of, of harming someone else. And yet for some reason I had desire to, to condition that out of me. And I did, day-by-day-by-day. Conditioned out on an abstract level and then when it got down to actual cases, it was guilt. I conditioned that out of myself too. And I always thought, well, you let this thing grow inside you or you, you allowed yourself to be conditioned, if that's another way to term it. I don't know whether we're dealing with an organic problem or behavioral problem or a combination of the two. But in any case I thought it's possible to counter condition myself. Well that uh, takes a process of years and I don't know if the damage was, is irreparable but in any case, it appears that by myself I'm not capable of doing it (Leon County Sheriff's Office, February 20, 1978, FSA).

Ted doesn't explain what the conditioning process involved, but in Polly Nelson's book he says:

... there was still, in essence, a barrier there to that kind of conduct. [...] in essence, my other erotic behavior—masturbation fantasy—was a way of deconditioning feelings of inhibition against engaging in conduct. At the same time it was a way of dealing with remorse, I mean, repressing any kind of remorse or guilt because the fantasy became more graphic each time it was aroused (Nelson 1994, 282).

Ted could be saying that he tried to sublimate his killing urge into sex, but it didn't always last. Eventually he had to go on and kill, because it gave him a guaranteed high. The mechanism whereby reality and fantasy merge (as opposed to being dissociated) is that Ted would often masturbate not just alone in his room, but in his car, in a forest, and while peeping into the windows of unsuspecting victims. The outdoor scenarios, due to their location, involve random environmental stimuli that could potentially intrude on the masturbation fantasy, however the masturbator becomes so involved in their autoerotic activity that all but the most alarming environmental stimuli are thresholded out of consciousness. This is the crux of Ted's conditioning. For Ted did not only have to overcome internal moral barriers, but the constant environmental signals that attenuated the positive feedback needed to attain sexual climax. At this level, there is a sense of pre-adolescent hide-and-seek mentality at play, a state of mind that may have mitigated any unwanted intrusions and fostered heightened arousal through the excitement of concealment and voyeurism. Eventually sex and killing would merge.

Lack of empathy

Another aspect of Ted's conditioning relates to claims that he lacked empathy. There are several theories of empathy. We shall use a tri-part system: cognitive,

emotional, and motor (Blair, 2005). The cognitive part has been referred to as “theory of mind” because it is the part that allows us to imagine what another person is thinking. It has been called theory of mind because when we imagine what another person is thinking, we assume they *actually* have a mind. Theory of mind only refers to relations between genuinely cognitive creatures. If there was a rock and we imagined what it was thinking, that would be a case of *projection*. Projection is tricky, because it is hard to deny that when we imagine someone else’s thoughts, we are also projecting our imagination into that person as well. The more we find out what that person is really thinking, the more we can withdraw our projection from them. The fascinating thing about projection is that it can never be completely withdrawn. There will always be a vestige of our imagination that lingers between us and the other person.

This is important, because it sweeps aside the popular assumption that a good empathiser is someone who is able to “step into someone else’s shoes.” It would be more appropriate to think of someone else’s thought processes as a topography. A good empathiser is someone who shares a similar topography and is able to traverse that topography in like fashion, giving the impression of sharing the same mental space. In truth, no topography is identical, and no navigation of it is the same. However, if there is a strong mapping between topographies, then the recipient feels they are being understood. If there is a weak mapping, then they feel they are not being understood. It might be this definition, of strong versus weak mapping, that differentiates empathy from sympathy.

Cast in terms of topography, we might say that the cognitive part of empathy can be likened to the contents of the landscape, the flora and fauna, the rocks and soil, the rivers and lakes. The emotional component would then be its weather, calm or stormy, and also the roughness of the terrain, the peaks and valleys, lush or desert. Finally, the motor component of empathy could be likened to the movement through the landscape, fast or slow, cumbersome or agile.

Naturally, we would say a good empathiser is someone who maps strongly onto our topography, who shares key features, and who moves through it with grace and agility. The dangerous thing about psychopaths is that they move through our landscape in all these ways by trickery. How are we to distinguish them from true empathisers? Often, by the time (we) the victim finds out it is too late.

The current consensus is that psychopaths have empathy when it is directed at themselves (narcissism), but no empathy for others. We might shake this definition up a little in relation to Ted because Liz (Kloepfer, aka “Kendall”) mentions “all the strays Ted had brought to my house, the hamsters and guinea pigs and kittens” (Kendall 1980, 76) and the time Freda Rogers and Ted had coffee in her kitchen and an outsized fly began to buzz around them; Frieda started to swat it, but Ted jumped up, exclaimed, “Don’t kill it!” and chased the fly out the window (M&A 1983, 67). And we recall Herb Swindler’s daughter saying how it was impossible not to love Ted (in the Platonic sense) for he was a champion of the down-trodden and dispossessed. Were these behaviors of Ted put on, or were they real? The orthodox model of psychopathy is the triad of bed wetting, animal cruelty and fire starting. Ted doesn’t seem to fit into this model at all.

If Ted's empathy system was impaired, that impairment must have been extraordinarily specific and contextual. Adrian Raine has developed a model that separates psychopaths into "successful" and "unsuccessful" (Gao & Raine, 2010). While this distinction is highly idealized, unpacking it provides some pointers for further discussion. Raine suggests that serial killers may fall in between these two categories and calls them "semi-successful." More research needs to be done, but it appears semi-successful psychopaths have somewhat enhanced cognitive capabilities compared with other apprehended violent offenders. Because semi-successful psychopaths share some overlapping abilities with successful psychopaths, there is a possibility that this group may share superior cognitive empathy – the ability to understand another's perspective without necessarily feeling any level of emotional empathy (Ishikawa et al, 2001). It is this overlapping ability that we will now turn our focus on.

What does it mean to possess superior cognitive empathy but no emotional empathy? Is this how people misinterpreted Ted's behavior, believing he was a gentle soul, wouldn't hurt a fly? In one study successful psychopaths were found to have increased frontal white matter but less gray matter that has been observed in pathological liars (Yang et al., 2005a, 2005b). On the one hand, this increased white matter—the fiber tracts that connect different regions of the brain—suggest greater integration, but due to the decreased gray matter—the processing areas—there is a paucity of properly thought through ideation, and in all likelihood, an increase of stereotypical thinking. In effect, the fiber tracts lead to lots of places, but those places are predominantly dead-ends. This very much supports the generally accepted observation that the fabrications of pathological liars when examined closely generally reveal a degree of absurdity and child-like logic. How many times have we seen Ted's ruses fall into this category? True as this is, it doesn't explain his apparent ability to fool people into thinking he was a caring individual. One may be able to fool people for a short period of time, but not over long periods in different contexts. Eventually people start to smell a rat.

Some psychopathic individuals may get away with superficial charm because they constantly shift to new social groups, never hang around long enough to be exposed. To a degree, this partially describes Ted, but he also had some long-term relationships (his family of course, but also Ann Rule, Liz Kloepfer, and the Rogers to name a few). One would think they would have detected some kind of abnormality in his emotional responses, but it seems that the problem is more complex than researchers of empathy would have us believe. The notion of specificity and context keeps rearing its ugly head. One study appears to have made an attempt to address this issue. Drawn from a population of incarcerated psychopaths (therefore perhaps representative of Raine's "unsuccessful" group), researchers using brain scans showed that psychopaths were able to "switch on" their empathy areas when asked to do so, but when no instructions were given they showed the typical blunted affect and lack of neural activation of empathy areas that has been consistently shown in a variety of other tests (Meffert et al 2013). The investigators did not come up with an explanation for this switching ability, but nevertheless identified the possibility that it may not be a broken empathy system as such but

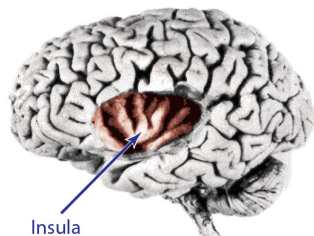
an attentional problem.

In support of this, another study found dramatic difference between psychopaths and normals in response to tasks that required affective processing. Psychopathy was measured using the Psychopathic Personality Inventory (PPI). Developed in 2005, the PPI is not identical to the PCL-R, but shares common conceptual areas. In general, the PCL-R is used more in criminal/forensic settings, whereas the PPI is intended more for sampling the community at large. Broadly speaking, the PPI loads onto 3 factors: fearless-dominance, impulsive antisociality, and coldheartedness. The average psychopath is said to have fearlessness and focus. These traits have traditionally been attributed to deficits in emotional processing. The results of the study demonstrated that psychopaths primarily used their right dorsolateral PFC, an area consistently associated with performance on working memory tasks, whereas the normals used a distributed general emotion network that includes the amygdala, and inferior frontal, medial prefrontal areas (Gordon et al., 2004).

Which is to say, psychopaths compensated for their emotional processing deficit by recruiting parts of their brain normally used for working memory tasks (which in our discussion is hypothesized to lead to more rapid ego-depletion than normals in situations where emotional recognition is required). The upshot of these studies suggests that psychopaths have the ability to recognize emotions, but do so without understanding what it often feels like to have those emotions. It may be that the reason why they are unable to experience any proper feelings behind the emotions of others is that all their neural resources are tied up in the task of simply recognizing what the emotion is, and by the time they have done that they have already fallen behind. No wonder Ted always felt like he needed to be one step ahead.

Because we cannot make the blanket claim that Ted *never* understood emotions, we are still left without a mechanism for why his empathy system failed when it did. It may be that the emotional component of his empathy system was susceptible to being hijacked by certain environmental stimuli and sent into a *positive feedback loop* (Buckholtz 2010; note: normal individuals are able to exert PFC control and interrupt the loop). In terms of an empathy breakdown, we would say a psychopath is a person who is able to stop at a traffic signal under normal circumstances when the light is red. However, if they are distracted by a triggering stimulus as they approach the intersection—one that they are vulnerable to—they may shift their attention and drive through the red light with little awareness of wrongdoing (or willful wrongdoing as the case may be). In essence, the emotional component of their empathy system has undergone a *stimulus-dependent failure*. It is quite possible that they could still function perfectly normal at the cognitive and motor level.

Thus, a serial killer might recognize his victim has a mind, but he treats them like a symbolic object. He may mimic the expressions of pain in a victim's face in his own face, thereby showing his motor empathy is functioning. He might listen to the pleading of his victim, show he understands logically and analytically that what he is doing is wrong by offering excuses or apologies, but he will go on and kill his victim regardless because the emotional component of his empathy system



The insula is tucked deep within the folds of the cortex under, and inward, toward the central ventral area of the brain. You can only see it by pushing the temporal lobe down and cutting away part of the lateral cortex to peer inside.

has been hijacked and sent into a positive feedback loop and his need for gratification exceeds what he feels for them.

In his last interview Ted described how after a murder he would wake up in the morning with a clear mind, with all his “essential moral and ethical feelings intact at that moment,” and be absolutely horrified at what he had done – that he was capable of doing something like that (James Dobson interview, January 23, 1989). As much as we would like to think he is a “cold-hearted son of a bitch” through and through, what this illustrates is that once the individual has been sated and the energy levels are reset, normal function resumes, and with it, normal empathic responses – until the next PFC decompensation event occurs.

Necrophilia and the anterior insula

Our neurobehavioral model of Ted would not be complete if we did not explore the necrophilic side to his character. From all that we know it appears Ted was a homicidal necrophiliac. According to one influential study examining necrophilic behavior, up to two thirds of perpetrators are motivated by the desire to possess an unresisting and unrejecting partner (Rosman & Resnick 1989). Other motivations include a desire to be reunited with their dead romantic partner, sexual attraction to corpses, a desire to attain comfort or overcome feelings of isolation, and/or a need to gain self-esteem by expressing power over a homicide victim. The closest Ted came to revealing the psychological motivations for his necrophilic behavior was that he apparently said “he was preoccupied with the cyanotic hue of a corpse’s fingernails, discoloration of the skin after death” (K&B 2005, 513). He also told FBI agent Bill Hagmaier that:

If you’ve got time, they can be anything you want them to be. [...] after a while, murder isn’t just a crime of lust or violence. It becomes possession. They are part of you. After a while, when you plan these, that person becomes part of you and you are forever one. [...] even after twenty or thirty [...] it’s the same thing, because you’re the last one there. You feel the last bit of breath leaving their body. You’re looking into their eyes and basically, a person in that situation is God! You then possess them and they shall forever be a part of you. And the grounds where you kill them or leave them become sacred to you, and you will always be drawn back to them (M&A 1983, 317).

Ted obviously studied death. He became a master of knowing the threshold between life and death. He would have been a keen observer of vital signs. Which means that for him death was not over just because the person was clinically dead. Ted hinted that he would often return to interfere with his corpses until advanced

putrefaction prevented him from doing so (note that in some cases, he disappeared for days, so we do not know all the time relationships involved). Ted's additions to the FBI serial killer questionnaire are revealing. He expanded a whole section vis-a-vis "site where body was found" (Nelson 1994, 160-171). His detail is unquestionable. He expressed an area of knowledge that he was extraordinarily proficient in and he expressed it quite systematically. This leads directly to questions about hygiene, putrefaction odors, and serious deviancy. Normal people experience disgust reactions at situations involving lack of hygiene, putrefaction odors (e.g., *cadaverine* and *putrescine* – the smell of rotting flesh). All of these reactions, and more, are linked to the anterior insula. The insula has both social and biological circuits. This is demonstrated by its behavior: the observation of disgust in another and olfaction of a disgusting odor activate a similar neural representation of those emotions in its circuits (Wicker et al., 2003). The anterior insula has also been shown to light up when subjects viewed images of contamination and mutilation (Wright et al., 2004). The insula is an old structure, has diverse connections, and among its various facets is involved in the processing of norm violations (Sanfey et al., 2003), empathy (Singer, 2006), sexual arousal (Karama, 2002) and orgasms (Ortigue, 2007), showing that it has a broad range of connections with complex behavior.

The obvious question is: did Ted condition his anterior insula in some way so that it didn't bother him, or was it broken from the start? He once admitted sometimes he wished he didn't kill his victims so quickly so he could spend more time with them (while they were alive). Suggesting that he sometimes got himself into a position where he lost control, leaving him with a corpse too early. Inevitably, he'd end up spending more time with them when they were dead.

Intriguingly, the anterior insula has also been implicated during tests of self-awareness. Specifically, it appears to be central to two processes: subjective feelings from the body and emotional awareness. These processes are described by the James-Lange theory of emotions and Damasio's 'somatic marker' hypothesis (Craig, 2009). In these descriptions emotions are the result of a physiological reaction to events. For example, the olfactory pathway in the human brain is a rapid response system. Odor molecules enter the brain and directly connect to the limbic system, the emotional engine of the brain. Olfactory processing only receives PFC input after-the-event (the body reacts before the mind is aware of it). Activation of the limbic system is highly correlated with physiological reactions (heart rate increase, respiratory interruption, fight-flight etc). Ted would have surely been aware of putrefaction odors, but it seems he had a higher threshold for disgust. His body certainly reacted, but it appears his mind was disconnected in some way, leading us to question whether he would have felt as disgusted viscerally as we normals would have had we been in the same situation. The caveat of course is that Ted habituated himself step-by-step, he didn't plunge in *de novo*. It shows awareness of disgust can be decoupled from its emotional reaction. We know this because disaster recovery health workers can become habituated to overwhelming numbers of cadavers ... albeit leaving some to develop PTSD later on.

Trolling

In his final public interview with James Dobson, Ted said: “I led a normal life except for this one small but very potent, very destructive segment of it that I kept very secret, very close to myself, didn’t let anybody know about it ...” And to Lewis the day before he said: “We’re talking about less than 10 percent of my consciousness, my waking hours, during maybe the ten-year period were occupied with this kind of thing. I think that’s one thing people have a hard time understanding. They think that somehow, this predilection, this kind of thinking that goes along with this kind of violent behavior more or less permeates every aspect of your life and thoughts, and it’s not true – it doesn’t. It’s episodic and very compartmentalized, in some way.” Ted then contradicts himself and says: “inherent in its need to survive is secrecy” (Nelson 1994, 289).

The following list reveals a man whose life, from the time he began killing, significantly revolved around thinking about, planning and executing murder, then engaging in necrophilia and covering up the evidence of his crimes:

He constantly played “mind chess” with people, wherein he prepared dialogue in advance of a social situation so that he would feel in control.

He compulsively lied.

He bit his nails to the quick.

He voraciously consumed dime detective magazines depicting eroticized females bound, gagged, strangled, and molested by sexual perverts.

He was a big fan of junior-ed magazines (showing scantily clad teenage female cheerleaders).

He compulsively stole all manner of items from shops and people.

He had a sock obsession; he uncontrollably purchased more socks than he needed.

He compulsively followed women around at night without their knowledge.

He prowled neighborhoods and peered into windows, masturbating as he watched young females undress and go to bed.

He sometimes raped women without murdering them.

He prepared elaborate ruses using plaster casts, crutches, fake moustaches, different hair styles, fake identities, and changed license tags.

He carried a murder kit with him in his VW (handcuffs, binding, gloves, masks, ice-pick, flashlight and crow bar).

He removed the front passenger seat so he could carry his “cargo” on the floor next to him where he could control it.

He drove many miles for long hours in search of prey.

He staked out abduction sites and body locations in advance of his murders.

He collected flyers and pamphlets containing information about prospective abduction sites.

He followed the police reports of his murders in the newspapers and on TV.

He took several women on driving dates close to the areas where he dumped the bodies of his murder victims.

He constantly topped up the petrol tank of his car to ensure that he would never run out of gas in case he had a victim with him at the time.

He was a fastidious cleaner (in order to conceal his crimes).

He returned to his body locations to sexually molest the dead bodies of his victims

until he could not longer do so due to advanced putrefaction.

He took Polaroids of his victims and kept them in a shoebox so he could masturbate to them afterwards.

He kept at least five (possibly more) heads of his victims after murdering them (and did other unspeakable things to them).

In Utah he kept the complete bodies of females he murdered for several days or more, drained them of blood, applied make-up, nail polish and washed their hair.

Most of these activities take planning and preparation. Once you exclude normal activities such as daily chores, sleep, work and pro-social behavior, it is clear that Ted's 10 percent figure is not tenable. If we include the entire envelope of activities associated with hunting, killing and concealment, in his prime we would have to allocate at least 10-15 days a month, which pushes the figure closer to 50 percent, which is still probably an under-estimate.

Number of victims

They have no idea what it takes to do one, what it takes out of you (Nelson 1994, 257).

Ted's final victim count was somewhere in the vicinity of 30-35 (see victim tables). This corroborates his last confession to Lewis and contradicts Bob Koppel's and Seattle attorney John Henry Browne's claim of more than 100 (Browne claimed that Ted's first murder was a man). It most definitely contradicts the claim of Ronald M. Holmes that Ted's victims may total 365. Of course, there were also many Ted survivors. It could be safely assumed there were at least as many survivors as the dead, or more, so in total Ted was involved in 70 or more attacks at the most conservative estimate. In other words, what we are really saying is Ted spent a lot of time thinking about sex and killing, and when he had his mind on other matters he couldn't wait till he got back to thinking about sex and killing.

Table 1: Victims and suspected victims, Seattle base, Washington.

| D/M/Y | Days | Name | Age | Description | Taken from | Miles |
|----------|------|-------------------------|-----|-------------|--------------------|-------|
| 23/06/66 | 0 | Lisa E. Wick | 20 | Survived | Seattle, WA | N/A |
| 23/06/66 | 0 | Lonnie Trumbull | 20 | Body found | Seattle, WA | N/A |
| 1/02/69 | 954 | Unknown | ? | Survived | Ocean City, NJ | N/A |
| 30/05/69 | 118 | Susan Davis | 18 | Body found | Ocean City, NJ | 64 |
| 30/05/69 | 0 | Elizabeth Perry | 18 | Body found | Ocean City, NJ | 64 |
| 16/09/70 | 474 | Jeanette Rose Miller | 17 | Missing | Arlington, WA | 96 |
| 1/06/71 | 258 | Unknown | ? | Survived | Seattle, WA | N/A |
| 1/07/71 | 30 | Unknown | ? | Survived | Seattle, WA | N/A |
| 19/07/71 | 18 | Rita Curran | 24 | Body found | Burlington, VT | N/A |
| 22/07/71 | 3 | Joyce LePage | 21 | Body found | Pullman, WA | 583 |
| 1/01/72 | 163 | Unknown | ? | Survived | Seattle, WA | N/A |
| 25/05/72 | 145 | Beverly May Jenkins | 16 | Body found | Eugene, OR | 564 |
| 1/06/72 | 7 | Kerry May Hardy* | 22 | Body found | Seattle, WA | 166 |
| 1/06/72 | 0 | Geneva Joy Martin | 19 | Body found | Springfield, OR | 566 |
| 3/03/73 | 275 | Kathleen Edna Rodger | 16 | Missing | Oroville, CA | 1368 |
| 1/05/73 | 59 | Unknown hitchhiker** | ? | Missing | Tumwater, WA | 122 |
| 20/06/73 | 50 | Allison Lynn Kaufman | 15 | Body found | Portland, OR | 380 |
| 29/06/73 | 9 | Rita Lorraine Jolley | 17 | Missing | West Linn, OR | 374 |
| 1/07/73 | 2 | Laurie Lee Canaday | 18 | Body found | Portland, OR | 352 |
| 20/08/73 | 50 | Vicki Lynn Hollar | 24 | Missing | Eugene, OR | 566 |
| 15/10/73 | 50 | Deborah Lee Tomlinson | 16 | Missing | Creswell, OR | 584 |
| 4/11/73 | 20 | Laura A O'Dell | 21 | Body found | San Francisco, CA | 1616 |
| 5/11/73 | 1 | Suzanne Rae Justis | 23 | Missing | Portland, OR | 346 |
| 25/11/73 | 20 | Lulaida Morales Sejalbo | 17 | Missing | Santa Clara, CA | 1616 |
| 4/01/74 | 40 | Karen Lee Sparks | 18 | Survived | Seattle, WA | N/A |
| 31/01/74 | 27 | Lynda Ann Healy | 21 | Skull found | Seattle, WA | 66 |
| 2/03/74 | 30 | Unknown | 20 | Survived | Seattle, WA | N/A |
| 12/03/74 | 10 | Donna Gail Manson | 19 | Missing | Seattle, WA | ? |
| 17/04/74 | 36 | Susan Elaine Rancourt | 18 | Skull found | Ellensburg, WA | 280 |
| 6/05/74 | 19 | Roberta Kathleen Parks | 22 | Skull found | Corvallis, OR | 553 |
| 1/06/74 | 3 | Brenda Carol Ball | 22 | Skull found | Burien, WA | 77 |
| 12/06/74 | 11 | Georgeann Hawkins | 18 | Femur found | Seattle, WA | 38 |
| 1/07/74 | 19 | Sandra Jean Weaver | 19 | Body found | Salt Lake City, UT | 2294 |
| 14/07/74 | 13 | Janice Ott | 23 | Bones found | Issaquah, WA | 23 |
| 14/07/74 | 0 | Denise Marie Naslund | 19 | Bones found | Issaquah, WA | 40 |

Blue = victims to which Ted confessed to; **Blue bold** = victims that Ted murdered; **Red** = increased probability that Ted was involved; **Green** = decreased probability that Ted was involved; Days = number of days between victims (not necessarily Ted's); Miles = these figures are summed, where applicable, from 1) the distance from Ted's home to the location of abduction; 2) the distance from the location of abduction to the body location; and 3) the distance from the body location back to Ted's home.

* Kerry May Hardy's body was found September 2010 in Suncadia Resort, Washington.

** Ted said that the girl was about 15 or 16.

Table 2: Victims and suspected victims, SLC base, Utah.

| D/M/Y | Days | Name | Age | Description | Taken from | Miles |
|----------|------|------------------------|-----|-------------|--------------------|-------|
| 2/09/74 | 1 | Unknown hitchhiker | ? | Missing | Boise, ID | N/A |
| 2/10/74 | 30 | Nancy Wilcox | 16 | Missing | Holladay, UT | 18 |
| 18/10/74 | 16 | Melissa Smith | 17 | Body found | Midvale, UT | 61 |
| 31/10/74 | 13 | Laura Ann Aime | 17 | Body found | Lehi, UT | 77 |
| 8/11/74 | 8 | Carol Ann DaRonch | 18 | Survived | Murray, UT | 13 |
| 8/11/74 | 0 | Deborah Jean Kent | 17 | Missing | Bountiful, UT | 228 |
| 4/12/74 | 26 | Laurie Lynn Partridge | 17 | Missing | Spokane, WA | 1442 |
| 12/01/75 | 39 | Caryn Eileen Campbell | 23 | Body found | Snowmass, CO | 790 |
| 15/03/75 | 62 | Julie Cunningham | 26 | Missing | Vail, CO | 870 |
| 6/04/75 | 22 | Denise Lynn Oliverson | 24 | Missing | Grand Junction, CO | 568 |
| 15/04/75 | 9 | Melanie Suzanne Cooley | 18 | Body found | Nederland, CO | 1088 |
| 6/05/75 | 21 | Lynette Dawn Culver | 12 | Missing | Pocatello, ID | 330 |
| 27/06/75 | 52 | Susan Curtis | 15 | Missing | Provo, UT | 269 |
| 29/06/75 | 2 | Shelley Kay Robinson | 24 | Body found | Golden, CO | 1086 |
| 4/07/75 | 5 | Nancy Perry Baird | 23 | Missing | Layton, UT | 48 |
| 1/02/76 | 212 | Debbie Smith | 17 | Body found | Seattle, WA | 36 |








Table 3: Victims and suspected victims, Tallahassee base, Florida.

| D/M/Y | Days | Name | Age | Description | Taken from | Miles |
|----------|------|----------------------|-----|-------------|------------------|-------|
| 15/01/78 | 714 | Cheryl Rafferty | ? | Survived | Tallahassee, FL | N/A |
| 15/01/78 | 0 | Margaret Bowman | 21 | Body Found | Tallahassee, FL | N/A |
| 15/01/78 | 0 | Lisa Janet Levy | 21 | Body Found | Tallahassee, FL | N/A |
| 15/01/78 | 0 | Kathy Kleiner | 21 | Survived | Tallahassee, FL | N/A |
| 15/01/78 | 0 | Karen Chandler | 21 | Survived | Tallahassee, FL | N/A |
| 15/01/78 | 0 | Cheryl Anne Thomas | 21 | Survived | Tallahassee, FL | N/A |
| 8/02/78 | 24 | Leslie Parmenter | 14 | Survived | Jacksonville, FL | 126 |
| 9/02/78 | 1 | Kimberly Diane Leach | 12 | Body Found | Lake City, FL | 176 |

The suspect would have to fall into the rapist category. I have divided the rapists into five classifications: the show-off; the verbal abuser; the physical verbal abuser; and the last group, the necrophiliacs, who commit murder as part of their sexual gratification. They either have sexual intercourse just prior to the murder or possibly a single ejaculation, or else they have an ejaculation after the murder either by penetration or otherwise.

Excerpt from a letter written by Edward E. Shev, a consulting neurologist and psychiatrist, to Sonoma County, California, April 20, 1974, in relation to the murders that happened there during the early 1970s. Shev provided a detailed list of traits he thought the killer would possess, among them this description of homicidal necrophilia. Source: KCA.

Table 3: Abduction Modus Operandi

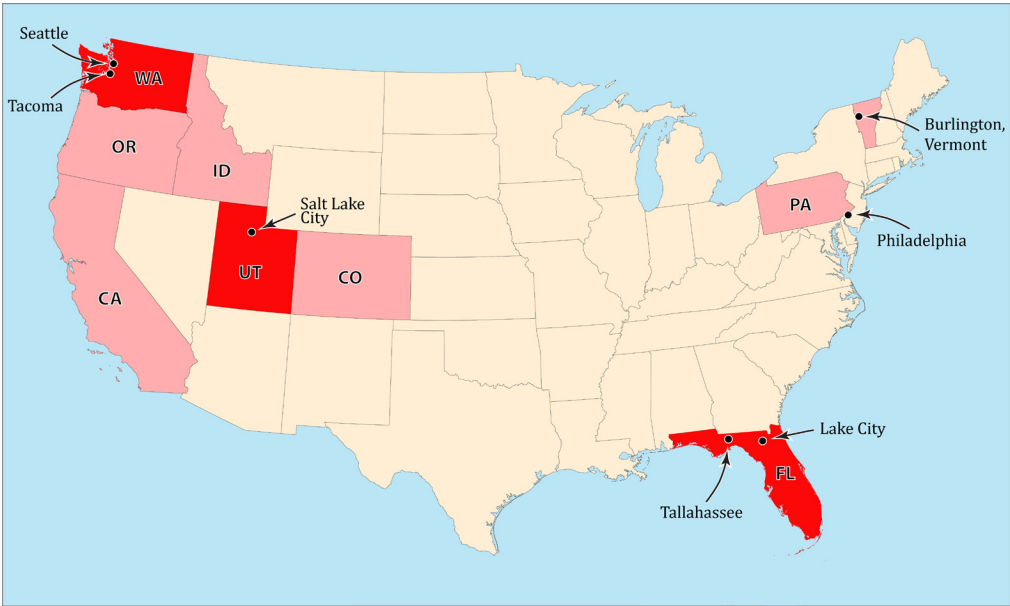
| Victim group | Abduction type | Ruse type | | Injury type | Request help type | Skull |
|---------------|----------------|---|---|-------------------------|-------------------|---|
| Hardy † | Blitz? | ? | ? | | | |
| Sparks * | Blitz |  | | | | |
| 1. Healy | Blitz |  |  | | | ✓ rts |
| 2. Manson | Ruse/Blitz? | ? |  | | | ✓ rts |
| 3. Rancourt | Ruse + Blitz |  |  | Injury | Sling | ✓ rts |
| 4. Parks | Ruse | |  | Companionship | Student | ✓  rts |
| 5. Ball | Ruse | |  | Companionship | Student? | ✓  rts |
| 6. Hawkins | Ruse + Blitz |  |  | Injury | Crutches | ✓ rts |
| 7. Ott | Ruse | |  | Injury | Sling | ✓ rts |
| 8. Naslund | Ruse | |  | Injury | Sling | ✓ rts |
| 9. Wilcox | Blitz |  |  | Acquaintance? | | ? rts? |
| 10. Smith | Blitz |  |  | | | |
| 11. Aime | Ruse |  |  | Acquaintance | Student? | rts? |
| DaRonch * | Ruse + Blitz |  | | Request help | Police officer | |
| 12. Kent | Blitz | ? |  | | | ? |
| 13. Campbell | Ruse + Blitz? |  |  | Injury/ Request help | Heart problem? | Car trouble? |
| 14. Cuningham | Ruse + Blitz |  |  | Injury | Crutches | rts |
| 15. Oliverson | Ruse/Blitz? | ? |  | Request help? | | Car trouble? |
| 16. Culver | Ruse | ? |  | Request help | | Authority figure? |
| 17. Curtis | Ruse/Blitz? | ? |  | Request help? | | Car trouble? |
| 18. Bowman | Blitz |  |  | | | |
| Kleiner * | Blitz |  | | | | |
| Chandler * | Blitz |  | | | | |
| 19. Levy | Blitz |  |  | | | |
| Thomas * | Blitz |  | | | | |
| Parmenter * | Ruse | | | Request help | | Fireman |
| 20. Leach | Ruse |  | ? | Request help | | Authority figure? |

†= unconfirmed. * = survived. rts = returned to site.

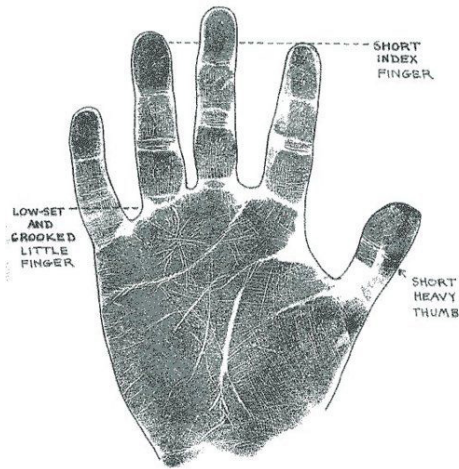
Table 4: The abduction-rape location interval

| Victim | Abduction location | Rape location | Travel time (mins) |
|------------|-----------------------------|----------------------------------|--------------------|
| Sparks | 4325 8th Ave NE, Seatl | <i>4325 8th Ave NE, Seatl</i> | 0 |
| Bowman | Chi-Omega House | <i>Chi-Omega House</i> | 0 |
| Levy | Chi-Omega House | <i>Chi-Omega House</i> | 0 |
| Kleiner | Chi-Omega House | <i>Chi-Omega House</i> | 0 |
| Chandler | Chi-Omega House | <i>Chi-Omega House</i> | 0 |
| Thomas | Dunwoody Street | <i>Dunwoody Street</i> | 0 |
| Wilcox | Arnett Drive, Holladay | Millcreek-Holladay area | 5 |
| Campbell | Wildwood Inn | <i>Owl Creek Road*</i> | 5 |
| Parks | Oregon State Univ. | OSU boathouse | 5 |
| Oliverson | Grand Juntion rail overpass | 23 1/2 Road Riverside Parkway | 10 |
| Kent | Viewmont High | Farmington Bay - Centerville | 10 |
| Ott | Lake Sammamish | <i>Issaquah</i> | 10 |
| Naslund | Lake Sammamish | <i>Issaquah</i> | 10 |
| Ball | Flame Tavern | Sea-Tac? | 10 |
| Manson | Evergreen State College | Delphi Road SW | 15 |
| Aime | Robinson Park? | Timpanogos Cave? | 15 |
| Hawkins | Greek Row | <i>Issaquah</i> | 25 |
| Rancourt | Central Washington Univ. | Yakima River-Taylor Road | 30 |
| Curtis | Brigham Young Univ. | Thistle | 35 |
| Leach | Lake City Junior High | <i>Suwannee River State Park</i> | 45 |
| Smith | Wasatch - I-15 overpass | <i>Lamb's Canyon</i> | 45 |
| Healy | 5517 12th NE, Seatl | <i>Taylor Mountain?</i> | 60 |
| Cunningham | Vail | <i>Rifle</i> | 65 |

Italics represents same body disposal/victim abandonment location as rape location. * Rape body location close enough to be the same. Excluding zero values, the average abduction-rape interval is 15.5 mins +/- 20 mins. The data shows that Ted generally raped his victims as soon as practically possible after abduction.



The Bundy footprint. Washington: confessed 11, 8 identified. According to Ted the unidentified cases were south of Seattle. Oregon: confessed to 2, 1 identified. California: confessed to 1, none identified. Idaho: confessed to 2, 1 identified. The other is the Boise hitchhiker. Colorado: confessed to 3, 3 identified. Utah: confessed to 8, 5 identified. Florida: confessed to 3, 3 identified. Map courtesy © Free Vector Maps.



The hand of Serial Killer Ted Bundy

Ted's left hand palm print. His digit ratio ($2D/4D$) is approximately 0.9508 (somewhat in the lower range), suggesting high levels of intrauterine testosterone. Low second-to-fourth digit ratio has been associated with more aggressiveness and risk-taking in males, e.g., (Perciavalle et al 2013).

References

- Arendt, M., Mortensen, P. B., Rosenberg, R., Pedersen, C. B. & Waltoft, B. L. (2008). Familial predisposition for psychiatric disorder: Comparison of subjects treated for cannabis-induced psychosis and schizophrenia. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 65(11), pp. 1269-74.
- Baumeister, R. F., Muraven, M. & Tice, D. M. (2000). Ego-depletion: A resource model of volition, self-regulation, and controlled processing. *Social Cognition*, 18(2), pp. 130-50.
- Bechara, A., Damasio, H. & Damasio, A. R. (2000). Emotion, decision making and the orbitofrontal cortex. *Cerebral Cortex*, 10(3), pp. 295-307.
- Bell, V. (2013). A community of one: Social cognition and auditory verbal hallucinations. *PLoS Biol*, 11(12), p. e1001723.
- Berridge, K. C. (2007). The debate over dopamine's role in reward: The case for incentive salience. *Psychopharmacology*, 191(3), pp. 391-431.
- Bhattacharyya, S., Crippa, J. A., Allen, P., Martin-Santos, R., Borgwardt, S., et al. (2012). Induction of psychosis by δ 9-tetrahydrocannabinol reflects modulation of prefrontal and striatal function during attentional salience processing. *Archives of General Psychiatry*, 69(1), pp. 27-36.
- Blair, R. J. R. (2005). Responding to the emotions of others: Dissociating forms of empathy through the study of typical and psychiatric populations. *Consciousness and Cognition*, 14(4), pp. 698-718.
- Brennan, K. (January 25, 1989) Violent Childhood Twisted Killer, Doctor Says. philly.com. (http://articles.philly.com/1989-01-25/news/26122339_1_bundy-louise-cowell-violent-childhood). Accessed March 2, 2015.
- Buckholtz, J. W., Treadway, M. T., Cowan, R. L., Woodward, N. D., Benning, S. D., et al. (2010). Mesolimbic dopamine reward system hypersensitivity in individuals with psychopathic traits. *Nature Neuroscience*, 13(4), pp. 419-21.
- Carlisle, A. (1993). Toward an understanding of the dark side of the serial killer. *American Journal of Criminal Justice*, XVII(2), pp. 23-33.
- Carlisle, A. (2013). *I'm Not Guilty* (2nd ed.). Encino, CA: Genius Book Publishing.
- Christensen, W. (2007). The evolutionary origins of volition. In D. Spurrett, H. Kincaid, D. Ross & L. Stephens (Eds.), *Distributed Cognition and the Will: Individual Volition and Social Context* (pp. 255-88). Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.
- Clark, A. & Chalmers, D. (1998). The extended mind. *Analysis*, 58, pp. 7-19.
- Cleckley, H. M. (1941). *The Mask of Sanity: An Attempt to Clarify Some Issues About the So-Called Psychopathic Personality*. St. Louis: MO: Mosby.
- Coolidge, F. L., Thede, L. L. & Jang, K. L. (2004). Are personality disorders psychological manifestations of executive function deficits? Bivariate heritability evidence from a twin study. *Behavior Genetics*, 34(1), pp. 75-84.
- Craig, A. D. B. (2009). How do you feel – now? The anterior insula and human awareness. *Nature Reviews Neuroscience*, (10), pp. 59-70.
- Donahue, E. M., Robins, R. W., Roberts, B. W. & John, O. P. (1993). The divided self: Concurrent and longitudinal effects of psychological adjustment and social roles on self-concept differentiation. *Journal of Personality and Social Psychology*, 64(5), pp. 834-46.
- Frith, C. D., Blakemore, S.-J. & Wolpert, D. M. (2000). Explaining the symptoms of schizophrenia: Abnormalities in the awareness of action. *Brain Research Reviews*, 31(2), pp. 357-63.
- Fuster J. M. *The PFC: Anatomy, Physiology and Neuropsychology of the Frontal Lobe*. New York: Lippincott-Raven; 1997.
- Fuster, J. M. (2001). The prefrontal cortex – an update: Time is of the essence. *Neuron*, 30(2), pp. 319-33.
- Gao, Y., & Raine, A. (2010). Successful and unsuccessful psychopaths: A neurobiological model. *Behavioral Sciences & the Law*, 28(2), 194-210.
- Geberth, V. J. (1990). Serial killer and the revelations of Ted Bundy. *Law and Order*, 38(5), pp. 72-7.
- Goldman-Rakic, P. S., Cools, A. & Srivastava, K. (1996). The prefrontal landscape: Implications of functional architecture for understanding human mentation and the central executive [and Discussion]. *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences*, 351(1346), pp. 1445-53.
- Gordon, H. L., Baird, A. A., & End, A. (2004). Functional differences among those high and low on a trait measure of psychopathy. *Biological psychiatry*, 56(7), 516-521.
- Grossmann, T. (2013). Mapping prefrontal cortex functions in human infancy. *Infancy*, 18(3), pp. 303-24.
- Hare, R. D. (1970). *Psychopathy: Theory and Research*. New York: Wiley.

- Hare, R. D. (1991). *The Hare Psychopathy Checklist — Revised*. Toronto: Multi-Health Systems.
- Harlow, H. F., Dodsworth, R. O. & Harlow, M. K. (1965). Total social isolation in monkeys. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, 54(1), pp. 90-7.
- Hurlburt, R. T., Heavey, C. L. & Kelsey, J. M. (2013). Toward a phenomenology of inner speaking. *Consciousness and Cognition*, 22(4), pp. 1477-94.
- Ishikawa, S. S., Raine, A., Lencz, T., Bihle, S., & Lacasse, L. (2001). Autonomic stress reactivity and executive functions in successful and unsuccessful criminal psychopaths from the community. *Journal of Abnormal Psychology*, 110(3), 423.
- Jones, S. R. & Fernyhough, C. (2007). Neural correlates of inner speech and auditory verbal hallucinations: A critical review and theoretical integration. *Clinical Psychology Review*, 27(2), pp. 140-54.
- Karama, S., Lecours, A. R., Leroux, J. M., Bourgouin, P., Beaudoin, G., et al. (2002). Areas of brain activation in males and females during viewing of erotic film excerpts. *Human Brain Mapping*, 16(1), pp. 1-13.
- Kendall, E. (1981). *The Phantom Prince: My Life with Ted Bundy*. Seattle, WA: Madrona Publishers.
- Keppel, R. D. & Birnes, W. J. (2004). *The Riverman: Ted Bundy and I Hunt for the Green River Killer*. New York: Pocket Books.
- Luria A. R. *Higher Cortical Functions in Man*. New York: Basic Books; 1966.
- MacPherson, M. (1989). Ted Bundy: Anatomy of a serial killer. *Vanity Fair*, May, pp. 144-198.
- McGuire, P., Silbersweig, D., Murray, R., David, A., Frackowiak, R., et al. (1996). Functional anatomy of inner speech and auditory verbal imagery. *Psychological Medicine*, 26(01), pp. 29-38.
- Meffert, H., Gazzola, V., den Boer, J. A., Bartels, A. A., & Keysers, C. (2013). Reduced spontaneous but relatively normal deliberate vicarious representations in psychopathy. *Brain*, 136(8), 2550-2562.
- Merckelbach, H., Devilly, G. J. & Rassin, E. (2002). Alters in dissociative identity disorder: Metaphors or genuine entities? *Clinical Psychology Review*, 22(4), pp. 481-97.
- Michaud, S. G. & Aynesworth, H. (1983). *The Only Living Witness*. Authorlink Press, Irving, Texas.
- Michaud, S. G. & Aynesworth, H. (2000). *Ted Bundy: Conversations with a Killer*. Authorlink Press, Irving, Texas.
- Morin, A. (2009). Self-awareness deficits following loss of inner speech: Dr. Jill Bolte Taylor's case study. *Consciousness and Cognition*, 18(2), pp. 524-9.
- Nelson, P. (1994). *Defending the Devil*. William Morrow and Company. New York.
- Ortigue, S., Grafton, S. T. & Bianchi-Demicheli, F. (2007). Correlation between insula activation and self-reported quality of orgasm in women. *Neuroimage*, 37(2), pp. 551-60.
- Perciavalle, V., Di Corrado, D., Petralia, M. C., Gurrise, L., Massimino, S., et al. (2013). The second-to-fourth digit ratio correlates with aggressive behavior in professional soccer players. *Molecular Medicine Reports*, 7(6), pp. 1733-8.
- Raichle, M. E., MacLeod, A. M., Snyder, A. Z., Powers, W. J., Gusnard, D. A., et al. (2001). A default mode of brain function. *Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America*, 98, pp. 676-82.
- Robinson, T. E. & Berridge, K. C. (2008). The incentive sensitization theory of addiction: Some current issues. *Philosophical Transactions of the Royal Society B: Biological Sciences*, 363(1507), pp. 3137-46.
- Robertson, J. & Bowlby, J. (1952). Responses of young children to separation from their mothers II: Observations of the sequences of response of children aged 18 to 24 months during the course of separation. *Courrier du Centre International de l'Enfance*, 2, pp. 131-42.
- Sanfey, A. G., Rilling, J. K., Aronson, J. A., Nystrom, L. E. & Cohen, J. D. (2003). The neural basis of economic decision-making in the ultimatum game. *Science*, 300(5626), pp. 1755-8.
- Schneider, K. (1959). *Klinische Psychopathologie*. New York/Stuttgart : Thieme Verlag.
- Seal, M., Aleman, A. & McGuire, P. (2004). Compelling imagery, unanticipated speech and deceptive memory: Neurocognitive models of auditory verbal hallucinations in schizophrenia. *Cognitive Neuropsychiatry*, 9(1-2), pp. 43-72.
- Sekar, A., Bialas, A. R., de Rivera, H., Davis, A., Hammond, T. R., et al. (2016). Schizophrenia risk from complex variation of complement component 4. *Nature*, 530(7589), pp. 177-83.
- Shimamura, A. P. (2000). The role of the prefrontal cortex in dynamic filtering. *Psychobiology*, 28(2), pp. 207-18.
- Singer, T. (2006). The neuronal basis and ontogeny of empathy and mind reading: Review of literature and implications for future research. *Neuroscience & Biobehavioral Reviews*, 30(6), pp. 855-63.
- Taylor, J. B. (2008). *My Stroke of Insight: A Brain Scientist's Personal Journey*. Viking.
- Voon, V., Mole, T. B., Banca, P., Porter, L., Morris, L., et al. (2014). Neural correlates of sexual cue reactivity

- in individuals with and without compulsive sexual behaviours. *PLOS ONE* 9(7), p. e102419.
- Wicker, B., Keysers, C., Plailly, J., Royet, J.-P., Gallese, V., et al. (2003). Both of us disgusted in my insula: The common neural basis of seeing and feeling disgust. *Neuron*, 40(3), pp. 655-64.
- Wright, P., He, G., Shapira, N. A., Goodman, W. K. & Liu, Y. (2004). Disgust and the insula: fMRI responses to pictures of mutilation and contamination. *Neuroreport*, 15(15), pp. 2347-51.
- Yang, Y., Raine, A., Lencz, T., Bihrl, S., Lacasse, L., & Colletti, P. (2005a). Prefrontal white matter in pathological liars. *The British Journal of Psychiatry*, 187(4), 320-325.
- Yang, Y., Raine, A., Lencz, T., Bihrl, S., LaCasse, L., & Colletti, P. (2005b). Volume reduction in prefrontal gray matter in unsuccessful criminal psychopaths. *Biological psychiatry*, 57(10), 1103-1108.

Childhood Years (1946-1959)

- 1922 -

1922: Johnnie Culpepper Bundy born, Tacoma.

- 1924 -

1924: Eleanor Louise Cowell born, Philadelphia.

- 1927 -

December 10, 1927: Harvey Murray Glatman born in The Bronx, New York City.

- 1939 -

January 31, 1939: Jerome Henry “Jerry” Brudos born in Webster, South Dakota.

- 1940 -

November 7, 1940: Collapse of the Tacoma Narrows Bridge, Pierce County.

- 1945 -

May 4, 1945: Glatman attacks Eula Jo Hand (17) while on her way home from the movies in the Capitol Hill neighborhood of Denver. He puts a gun to her back, takes her to an alley, ties her to a telephone pole, molests her, and steals 18 street-car tokens and \$14.95. Hand tell police she recognized her attacker as a fellow East High student.

May 18, 1945: Glatman is arrested in Denver for the first time for the “robbery” of Eula Jo Hand and two other women.

May 21, 1945: Ophelia Glatman bails her son out of jail for \$2,000.

July 15, 1945: While out of jail on bond, Glatman binds, gags, molests, and robs Norene Lauer (age ?) in Boulder, Colorado, of \$2..



Harvey Glatman
Colorado prison
photo, December
5, 1945. Photo
public domain.

July 17, 1945: Glatman is arrested in Denver for the second time for the assault on Norene Lauer.

July 31–September 8, 1945: Glatman is confined in the Colorado Psychopathic Hospital.

September 2, 1945: Official surrender of the Japanese, thereby ending WWII. Sam Lusky, writing for the *Rocky Mountain News*, described the Denver scene: “... servicemen kissed their girls and they kissed somebody else’s girl and pretty soon everybody was kissing everybody else, and nobody was complaining” (Newton 1998, 45).

September 27, 1945: While out of the hospital and out on bond from both the Denver and Boulder county jails, Glatman bound,



Louise Cowell sometime around Ted's birth. Photo public domain.



Elizabeth Lund Home for Unwed Mothers (circa 1940s). Photo source <http://www.lundvt.org>.



Lund cribs (circa 1940s). Photo source <http://www.lundvt.org>.

gagged, molested, and robbed two women in the Park Hill neighborhood of Denver. He also molested another Denver woman, who screamed and ran out of her house.

September 30, 1945: Glatman is arrested in Denver for the third time, for the Park Hill neighborhood assaults.

December 5, 1945: Glatman begins his first prison term at the Colorado State Penitentiary.

- 1946 -

March 25, 1946: Gerard John Schaefer born in Wisconsin.

July 27, 1946: Glatman is paroled from the Colorado State Penitentiary after less than eight months of his one-to-five-year sentence.

July 27–August 25, 1946: Glatman returns to his mother in New York State. There, he commits several more robberies and assaults on women.

August 25, 1946: Glatman is arrested and confined in jail, Albany, New York.

October 10, 1946: Glatman is sentenced to one-to-five-years for the first of his New York robberies and assaults.

November 24, 1946: Theodore Robert Cowell born at The Elizabeth Lund Home for Unwed Mothers in Burlington, Vermont, on Lake Champlain. Louise spent a total of 63 days at Lund, presumably up until, and a short while after, Ted was born. He weighed 7 lbs, 9 oz. and there were “no complications” (MacPherson 1989, 145). Louise left Elizabeth Lund alone, leaving Ted there for adoption. Ted spent 3 months motherless at Elizabeth Lund before Ted's grandfather Samuel F. Cowell insisted that Louise take him

home to Roxborough (on the Schuylkill River). Louise claimed she was seduced by a war veteran; nothing has been found on the man. In the end, Louise was just as secretive about who Ted's father was as Ted was about his murders. According to Ted's great-aunt Virginia Bristol: “When I heard Louise was ‘not home’ I knew things were not right. Next thing I heard was that Sam and Eleanor had adopted a boy. I was smart enough to know damn well they weren't adopting this baby. No adoption agency would've given them one; Eleanor wasn't well enough to take care of one! I knew it had to be Louise's baby. But they wanted to cover up. All we ever got was evasions. I had a very secretive brother” (MacPherson 1989, 145).

- 1947 -

1947: William E. Cosden Jr. born in Maryland.

February 1947: After spending 3 months alone at Lund, Louise brings Ted home



Map showing Roxborough in relation to Lafayette Hill, where Ted stayed in December 1968. Map courtesy OpenStreetMap contributors 2015. Photo insets (top row): A sample of 1940s pornography. Photo insets (bottom row): Samuel Cowell (left) and Louise Cowell (right) with Ted. Photos public domain.



Tacoma, looking east on 9th Street, circa 1953. Photo from an old postcard, public domain.



Brown's Point, Tacoma, circa 1950. Photo courtesy U.S. Coast Guard.

- 1951 -

1951: Moved to Tacoma and briefly stayed at uncle John "Jack" R. Cowell's on Alder Street, before moving to Browns Point. Started kindergarten (4 years old). Becomes friends with "Bill" and "Richard." As to why Louise moved, Ted's grandaunt Virginia Bristol put it this way: "We felt Louise had to be rescued" (M&A 1983, 313).

May 2, 1951: Glatman returns to Denver, where his parole stipulates that he be put under the care of psychiatrist Franklin G. Ebaugh.

May 19, 1951: After meeting at a Methodist church adults' night (singles dance) Louise Cowell (27) marries John Culpepper Bundy (29), a mustered out Navy man. Ted sticks his hand in the wedding cake. Parents move to 1620 South

to the "middle-class" rural suburb of Roxborough, Philadelphia (Brennan 1989). Ted was "adopted" by grandfather Samuel F. Cowell and wife Eleanor. Ted was led to believe his grandparents were his parents, his mother his sister.

- 1949 -

1949: Warren Leslie Forrest born in Vancouver, Washington.

February 18, 1949: Gary Leon Ridgeway born in Utah.

- 1950 -

1950: Story has it Ted sneaks into grandfather Samuel's greenhouse with Cousin "Bruce" and secretly peruses his stash of pornography. Samuel incorporated "Roxborough Nursery" on March 22, 1950, at 7202 Ridge Road, Roxborough.

October 6, 1950: Louise Cowell goes to local court in Philadelphia and changes Ted's name to Theodore Robert Nelson.



Jack Cowell (undated). Photo public domain.

Sheridan Avenue, Tacoma. Attends Stanley Elementary school (1712 S 17th St., Tacoma). Attends Methodist church every Sunday.



A typical street scene on South Sheridan Avenue. Photo courtesy Vincent Tan © 2015.



John Culpepper Bundy with Ted (dated 1953). Photo public domain.



658 North Skyline Drive, Tacoma. Photo courtesy Vincent Tan © 2015.

September 12, 1951: Gerald Eugene Stano born in Schenectady, New York.

- 1952 -

1952: The term “psychopath” was officially replaced with “sociopathic personality” (Tanay 2010, 128). Glatman’s father, Albert Glatman, dies.

Late 1952: Linda Bundy is born. Ted is no longer permitted into his parents bed when he grows frightened in the middle of the night.

- 1953 -

1953: Glatman’s psychiatrist, Franklin Ebaugh, retires leaving Glatman unattended.

1953: Ted attends Geiger Elementary school (621 South Jackson Avenue, Tacoma). Aged 7, Ted’s second grade teacher Miss Geri breaks a ruler over his knuckles for having socked a class-

mate in the nose during a playground scuffle. Around this time Ted began to feel a vague sense of “uneasiness” within himself (M&A 1983, 53). Parents move to 658 North Skyline Drive.

- 1954 -

February 1954: Glen Bundy is born. Ted becomes friends with Doug and Sandi Holt (Morris 2013, 80). Sandi and Doug lived on North Howard Street, about a block from Skyline Drive where Ted lived. Ted joins the Boy Scouts. He hits a kid named John Moon on the head with a stick “from behind.” In an unverified story,



Ted the Boy Scout, farthest right. Doug Holt center, holding the puppet up to the camera. Photo courtesy Rebecca Morris (2013). Photo original source Beverly Burr.



April-May 1954: *Crime Suspense Stories* was a bi-monthly anthology crime comic published by EC Comics in the early 1950s. The first edition came out October/November 1950, the last February/March 1955. The issue pictured is number 22, April-May 1954. This cover is often trotted out in reference to Ted's appetite for detective magazines. Ted was 7 1/2 when this appeared. Photo public domain.



Warren Dodge, 1965 *Nova Yearbook*.

- 1955 -

1955: Becomes friends with Terry Storwick and Warren Dodge. Enters second grade at Geiger Elementary school.

on a Boy Scout camping trip one summer, the other troop members—including Doug—caught Ted and Doug Holt's father naked together in a tent in the middle of the day. Doug believed that something "kinky" had happened between his father and Ted. The other boys teased Ted; that may have been the outing when Ted hit John Moon. A father of one of the other boys berated Mr. Holt for being in the tent with Ted, but beyond that there were no repercussions. Ted abruptly stopped going

on Boy Scout camping trips but wouldn't explain why. Remarkably, Sandi said her father sexually abused her and Doug throughout their childhood (Morris 2013, 81-82). In other unverified stories, Sandi said she saw Ted use a pocket knife to cut open animals, douse them with gasoline, and set them on fire; Ted and Doug used knives to slash the leather seats of expensive cars in the neighborhood; Ted would try to "pants" young girls, lure them into the woods, pull down their pants, and urinate on them; Doug Holt was a little smaller than Ted, but he hit Ted once when he tried to drag Sandi into the woods (Morris 2013, 82).

April 8, 1954: The body of Jane Doe is found west of Boulder. She was identified as Dorothy Gay Howard (18) on October 28, 2009. Police believe she may have been a victim of Glatman. The theory is she was hit by a car while running away from him. Boulder detective Steve Ainsworth tracked down a 1951 Dodge Coronet like the one Glatman bought in Denver and was driving when arrested in California, and calculated



Dorothy Gay Howard, aged 15. Photo public domain.

where that car would have hit Howard's body. The locations match Howard's injuries.

Gainesville Sun - Jul 6, 1986

Boyhood friend glad Bundy was granted a stay

The Associated Press

TACOMA — Ted Bundy once had a friend named Warren Dodge. On the eve of Bundy's scheduled execution last week, Dodge could not believe in his heart that the shy and clever young man from his boyhood could be a killer.

Dodge, 39, is a drug store manager who still lives near the Tacoma neighborhood where he and Bundy grew up. As boys, they were inseparable. As men, they celebrated their common 21st birthday together.

"He had a bit of a temper, but so did a lot of other people who turned out all right," Dodge said. "The Ted Bundy sitting on death row is not in any way the same person."

Bundy was convicted in Florida in 1979 of killing a 12-year-old Lake City girl and two Chi Omega sorority sisters at Florida State University in Tallahassee. Police believe Bundy may be responsible for at least 36 slayings

around the country.

King County police describe Bundy as the prime suspect in the unsolved 1974 slayings of eight young women. Bundy, who was sentenced to death for the Florida slayings, won a two-month stay of his execution, which had been scheduled for last week.

Although he believes Bundy committed the murders, Dodge was glad Bundy won the stay.

"(Killing him) would serve no purpose," he said. "Granted, I wouldn't like to see him running around free, but I don't want him to die. I really don't."

"Deep down inside, I hope he never dies," he said.

Dodge has known Bundy since the two were in the second grade. After high school, they saw each other only rarely. Dodge stayed in Tacoma to attend the University of Puget Sound,

See **FRIEND** on page 4D



A Geiger Elementary class photo with Ted (circled above), perhaps circa 1955-6. Photo to public domain.

Friend

From page 1D

while Bundy went to Seattle to attend the University of Washington.

They last spoke in 1972 when Bundy was working on then-Gov. Dan Evans' re-election campaign. "He showed up one day and helped us move," Dodge said. "He seemed just like the Ted I knew before — maybe a little more sophisticated."

He did return to visit Dodge while out on bail after his 1975 arrest in Utah, but only Dodge's wife was home. By that time, suspicions about

Bundy were well-known.

"Her only reaction was absolute fear," Dodge said. "She would not allow him in the house." She told Bundy that Dodge would be back the next day, but Bundy never returned.

Dodge later learned Bundy wanted to communicate with him, but Dodge couldn't find it within him to write.

"What would I say after all this time and everything that's happened? I have no idea how I would word a letter to him. How could you just erase those 12 years and talk about high school?" he asked.

Ellensburg Daily Record - Jan 24, 1989

One friend, Terry Storwick, recalled a time when Bundy attacked another boy during a Boy Scout outing.

"It was easy to see when Ted got mad," Storwick told the authors of "The Only Living Witness," a book about Bundy. "His eyes turned about black with anger."

- 1956 -

1956: Sandra Bundy born. October 1975 – Ted (then aged 29) had been visiting home one evening when he noticed his 19-year old half-sister Sandra was preparing to go out on a date. Ted said, "You know, Mom, she looks like all those other girls." Her hair was long and parted in the middle. (Larson 1980, 90). In defence of Ted after his first arrest, Linda Bundy wrote: "I remember one time when he was home I understood my sister was going out. My brother asked who was she going with and where was she going because he was concerned" (PIR 1975). That Ted had a "type" cannot be denied, but many girls wore their hair long and parted in the middle in America at that time. So too did some men. What we do know was Ted was obsessed with cheerleaders, dancers, and athletic-looking girls. Many of them just happened to wear their hair long and parted in the middle. Their attractiveness, their willingness to help him, turn their backs on him was equally—if not more—important.

- 1957 -



Glatman's photo of Judith Ann Dull. Photo public domain

August 1, 1957: Harvey Glatman murders Judy Ann Dull (19) in Riverside County (Los Angeles), California. During his senior year in high school, 1944-5, he started binding, gagging, and molesting Denver women, while robbing them of small amounts of money. He was arrested several times for assault and robbery before he committed his first murder.

October 5, 1957: The Soviet Union puts Sputnik 1, the world's first artificial satellite, into orbit.

- 1958 -

1958: Ted enrolls at Hunt Junior High. For six years, from seventh grade at Hunt Junior High until he graduated from Wilson High in 1965, Ted sat behind Jerry Bullat in homeroom. The two boys formed a friendship based on their shared love of skiing, especially night skiing at Snoqualmie Pass, Washington



A class photo of Ted (circled) from Hunt Junior High (circa early 1960s). Photo public domain.



Hunt Junior High library, circa 1961. Can we imagine Ted here, exactly as it is? Photo accessed from Hunt Junior High facebook page.

(Morris 2013, 83-4). One day, Ted took Bullat aside at school and showed him a B&W photo of a man and a woman having oral sex. Bullat was shocked. Ted said he found it on the sidewalk, but Sandi Holt says Ted discovered it at her father's: he hid his porn outside in a bag under grass clippings on their North Howard Street property. Meanwhile Ted

adopts the role of Vice President of the local Methodist Youth Fellowship. It was reported that on several occasions, Ted was caught masturbating by his peers in the broom closet of his classroom at Hunt Junior High. Rumor has it, some fellow classmates would, on these occasions, open the door and throw cups of water on him and tease him (since when do junior high students carry around cups of water in class?). When asked about this for his PIR, Ted denied the allegation. According to Rule, after gym class Ted showered alone in a private stall. Inevitably, his peers, who showered in the open stalls, bullied him by throwing cold water over him (this sounds more plausible).

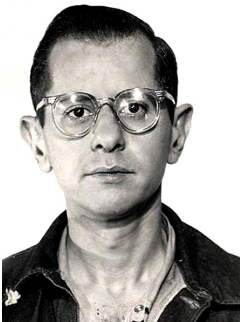
March 9, 1958: Glatman murders Shirley Ann Bridgeford (24) in San Diego County, California.



Left: Shirley Ann Bridgeford (circa 1958). Middle: Ruth Mercado. (circa 1958). Right: Lorraine Vigil (October 1958). Photos public domain.



Photo of Shirley Ann Bridgeford Glatman took shortly before strangulating her to death. Photo public domain.



Harvey Glatman, taken shortly after his arrest in October 1958. Photo public domain.

May 8, 1958: “Dracula,” starring Christopher Lee, debuts.

July 24, 1958: Glatman murders Ruth Mercado (24) in San Diego County, California.

October 27, 1958: Glatman is arrested in Orange County, California, while assaulting Lorraine Vigil (27).

October 31, 1958: Glatman is arrested for the murders of Bridgeford and Mercado, but not Dull.

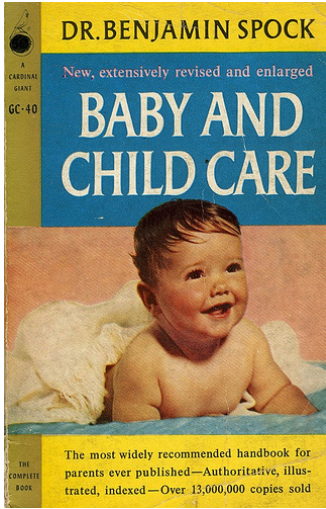
December 16, 1958: Glatman is sentenced to death for the murders of Bridgeford and Mercado. According to one interpretation of Glatman, it was all about the “rope” (Newton 1998, 177). “I would make them kneel down. With every one it was the same. With the gun on them I would tie this 5-foot piece of rope around their ankles. Then I would loop it up it up around their neck. Then I would stand there and keep pulling until they quit struggling.”

NOTES

If you count back 9 months from Ted's birth, you get August 24, 1945. The Japanese surrender occurred on September 2, 1945. That's a hell of a coincidence. An overflowing joyous feeling of liberation followed. Everyone let it all hang out. Doors opened, legs opened.

Did Ted have an idyllic childhood? From the point of view of freedom, yes. He wasn't sheltered. He could go out into the neighborhood and muck up with kids his own age. But the freedom stopped there. Psychologically Ted was cast off his moorings from the day he was born. There are different versions of Ted's birth and his relationship with his mother. In Louise Bundy's own words she said, "... she had gone with a young man for a short period of time and that after she became pregnant he left and she has not seen him since" (PIR 1975). That man, according to one account was Jack Worthington, "a rakish veteran of the recent war" (M&A 1983, 51). Another version is she was "left pregnant" by "a sailor" (Rule 2006, 7). The veteran and the sailor are probably the same man. According to Rebecca Morris, Rule never believed that story. She speculated that Louise was a victim of incest by her father Samuel F. Cowell (Morris 2013, 25). Morris also quotes Ted's defence attorney Polly Nelson as believing Louise "had made her decision when she left Vermont [...] that she never intended to keep Ted" (Morris 2013, 26). What Nelson actually said was "Ted was three months old by the time his mother retrieved him from the foundling home where she'd placed him for adoption after his birth (Nelson 1994, 155). No one actually knows if leaving Ted for adoption was something Louise willingly did, or whether it was driven by shame and fear of returning home with a child out of wedlock, since accounts generally paint a picture of the home run by Sam Cowell as a fearful place. What we do know for sure is that on the morning of his execution, Louise said, "You'll always be my precious son" (*The Telegraph*, January 24, 1989). In retrospect, it was too little, too late. Louise was just as secretive about her life as Ted was about the part of him that "was hidden, all the time" (*Ogden Standard Examiner*, 24 Jan. 1989). Few people, even in our modern age, fail to recognize the corrosive nature of secrecy. So we cannot hold that against Louise. We just wish it didn't have to be that way.

Secrecy made Ted a stranger in his own house. His half brothers and sisters, whom he often had to baby sit, were aged 7 years younger than him. When first-born Linda was a toddler, Ted was already 10-years old. By the time Linda first started taking shape as a little girl, Ted was entering puberty. No wonder Louise made sure to lock the door (and probably guard it) when Linda was taking a bath (Carlisle 2103, 33). It's tempting to see a connection between this prohibition and rumors of Ted's early sexual proclivities, one of which was to pull the pants down on young girls, drag them into the woods and urinate on them (Morris 2013, 16). One wonders why such behavior was never reported back to Ted's parents. It would have presented one of the many opportunities to intervene and suggests that this story may be more fiction than fact. In any case, in June 1987, Nelson learned that psychologist Arthur Norman "was out in Tacoma and had burst in on Ted's mother [...]. Apparently he had attempted to interview her, but ended



up browbeating her, telling her she must have been a bad mother not to have seen the signs in Ted as he was growing up” (Nelson 1994, 172). Despite this, we never learn much else from Louise except her saying: “We did everything parents of the ’50s and ’60s did”, even down to reading *Parent* magazine and Dr. Spock (*Sarasota Herald-Tribune*, February 20, 1989). They were devastated when Ted began confessing days before his execution. Louise said:

I don’t mean to say he was perfect. I mean, he would do things that would make us angry, and so forth – but what son doesn’t? All I can say is, he was the light of our lives. I wouldn’t say that if he had been a problem child or constantly misbehaving. We just cannot, in any way, figure what would have [...] caused it (*Ellensburg Daily Record*, January 23, 1989).

On entering junior high (aged about 12) Ted listened to “KGO in San Francisco, a talk show from about 10:00 p.m. into the early morning hours” (M&A 1989, 21). Ted really got into it. He learned a lot about how different people talked. He would then try out accents on people he knew. He soon became adept at taking on the subtle idiosyncrasies of various characters, a skill that would serve him well when hunting victims. Talkback radio provided Ted with a level of intimacy that he lacked in his home and school life. The late-to-early-morning hours of the show also established a different diurnal pattern in Ted’s life. It fostered the nascent vampire in him.

Whether it’s something that people pick up after-the-fact, finding faces in clouds, or whether it is a genuine theme running through Ted’s childhood, sex-gone-wrong seems to constantly loom large in his life. There is the story about Ted being found naked with a friend’s father in a tent during the day while on a Boy Scout outing; the story about Ted masturbating in a schoolroom broom closet and getting caught; of Ted finding porn in the neighborhood trash and showing it to his school friend; of Ted getting pushy and shovey anytime anyone would mention sex or girls. In general, these events tell us more about ourselves and our biases as to what we think might cause serial murder rather than what they actually tell us about Ted. In other words, it takes a lot more than a few isolated incidents to define a pattern.

Similarly, there is a tendency to blame Ted’s early home environment for what he became. Near the end of his life, Lewis learned about Sam Cowell and his violence and hypocrisy. It is not known if Ted bore the brunt of this behavior or was just an accidental witness. At the same time, Ted apparently perused Sam’s stash of porn in the old man’s garden shed as early as the age of three. (Note: this report came from Ted’s slightly older cousin Brian. How did Brian know about it? He would have had to see it himself. Why wasn’t he adversely affected?) Ted adored Samuel Cowell (M&A 1989, 18), so we have to imagine however warped Sam’s

world was, it was all Ted knew.

Which raises the specter of the absent father syndrome as another cause of Ted's malaise. All too often, Ted's illegitimacy is blamed as a significant force in his maladaptive development. When questioned by Donald M. Hall for his PIR Ted "displayed marked signs of hostility when asked about his early childhood. Later, in an interview for *Vanity Fair* magazine Lewis said, "many of Bundy's last thoughts and words were about his deep confusion and anger toward his mother" (MacPherson 1989, 142). So what are we to make of this? That Ted murdered young women because he was angry at his mother for not telling him the truth about his biological father? An appealing theory for those inclined to believe unanswered questions of paternity are sufficient to cause someone to become a serial murderer. Freudians would say Ted killed a symbolic image of his mother – in his eyes she was a whore, unfaithful. Ted presumably heard this from Sam, who probably called Louise a whore, a common term in those days. The sense of abandonment looms.

So perhaps the anger was directed more specifically at his early maternal abandonment. Harry Harlow's experiments on Rhesus monkeys in the 1950-60s established for the first time that infant maternal deprivation leads to a raft of behavioral problems later in life (Harlow et al., 1965). The problem here is that Harlow's experiments were conducted at the extreme end of the scale. Ted may have been temporarily motherless, but he received sufficient care to sustain good health. Childhood amnesia would have prevented any conscious recollection of the experience. And within a reasonably short period of time he was back in his mother's care, who, according to Ted's childhood friend Terry Storwick, "loved him very much" (M&A 1983, 57). Moreover, 5.1 percent of births by white women between 1945-49 in America were premarital (Bachu, 1999), and of those a percentage involved paternal abandonment, yet it can be safely said that most of the children from those abandoned conjunctions did not turn into murdering psychopaths. This is not to say that those first 3 months did not leave a lasting impact on Ted. The subtle signals of mimicry that build object relations in the newborn infant may been left partially undeveloped in Ted as a result of that early isolation. One just has to think of those poor Romanian orphans discovered after the fall of the Communist government in 1989. This could partly explain why he had trouble understanding human relations as an adult.

But if this is not enough, we still have to add stories of grandfather Sam talking to unseen presences and his grandmother suffering from (manic) depression and agoraphobia (M&A 1983, 314; Nelson 1994, 154). And to top it off, Ted was taught from an early age that his mother was his sister ... although family members remember Ted calling Louise "Mommy" when he was three (MacPherson 1989, 188). It would seem that not one thing but a row of dominos was at play. When you add it all up, it's hard to see how the little boy who had potentially inherited schizophrenic-type genes, had been maternally deprived, lied to, witnessed domestic violence, uprooted, isolated and shamed, could ever turn out to be anything but normal. It seems too much for one person to bear.

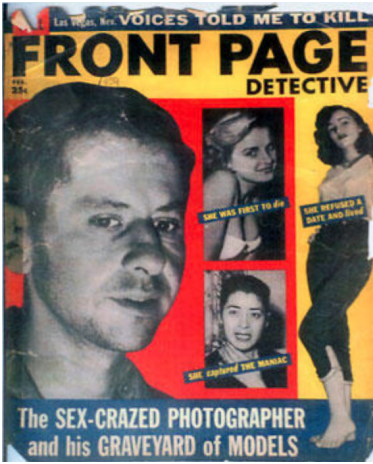
Should we feel sorry for little Ted? Perhaps we should. But Ted eventually went on to become a man. And to boot, someone who even studied psychology. We will

learn about that in subsequent chapters. What are we to make of his decisions then?

References

- Bachu, A. (1999). Trends in premarital childbearing. U.S. Department of Commerce, Economics and Statistics Administration, U.S. CENSUS BUREAU.
- Brennan, Kathy, Violent Childhood Twisted Killer, Doctor Says, Philly.com, January 25, 1989 (http://articles.philly.com/1989-01-25/news/26122339_1_bundy-louise-cowell-violent-childhood) (Accessed, June 21, 2015).
- Carlisle, A. (2013). *I'm Not Guilty* (2nd ed.). Encino, CA: Genius Book Publishing.
- Franscell, R. & Valentine, K. B. (2013). *The Crime Buff's Guide to Outlaw Pennsylvania*. Guilford, CT: Globe Pequot.
- Hall, D. M. (1975). Presentence Investigation Report. The State of Utah Adult Probation and Parole: Salt Lake City.
- MacPherson, M. (1989). Ted Bundy: Anatomy of a serial killer. *Vanity Fair*, May, pp. 144-198.
- Michaud, S. & Aynesworth, H. (1989). *Ted Bundy: Conversations with a Killer* (Paperback ed.). New York: Signet.
- Michaud, S. G. & Aynesworth, H. (1983). *The Only Living Witness: The True Story of Serial Sex Killer Ted Bundy*. Laguna, TX: Authorlink.
- Morris, R. (2013). *Ted and Ann: The Mystery of a Missing Child and Her Neighbor Ted Bundy*. Seattle, Washington: True Books.
- Nelson, P. (1994). *Defending the Devil*. New York: William Morrow and Company, Inc.
- Newton, M. (1998). *Rope: The Twisted Life and Crimes of Harvey Glatman*. New York: Simon and Schuster.
- Rule, A. (1989). *The Stranger Beside Me* (revised edition). London: Warner.
- Tanay, E. (2010). *American Legal Injustice: Behind the Scenes with an Expert Witness*. Plymouth, U.K.: Jason Aronson, Inc.

Teenage Years (1959-1965)



Boulder County Sheriff's Detective Steve Ainsworth used this cover of the 1959 edition of *Front Page Detective* as the front of an evidence file on Harvey Glatman. Photo public domain.



1959 Nash Rambler (model 6). Ted despised them. Photo public domain.



From left: Sandra, Glenn, Louise, Linda and Ted. Circa 1960. Photo Public Domain.

- 1959 -

September 18, 1959: Glatman, aged 31, is executed at San Quentin State Prison, California, in the gas chamber by sodium cyanide. It took him approximately 10 minutes to die.

- 1960 -

1960: In a conversation with Lewis the day before his execution, Ted told her that as a teenager of about 12-13, "over a two- or three-year period, I would go out at night, a warm night—we had some woods in the back of our house—I would take off my clothes and run around the woods" (Nelson 1994, 277). Explaining this behavior of himself, he said, "... I wasn't flashing on anybody or trying to imagine me stalking anybody, but it was just an innocent kind of sport. So there's nothing at this point that's bad, but I see what was happening, I was beginning to get involved in what they would call, developed a preference for what they call, autoerotic sexual activity. And that's exactly what it was." When he'd get home, he'd listen talkback radio into the early hours. As people called in to speak their minds, he would formulate questions as if they were talking to him personally (M&A 2000, 21).



Photo from the back dust cover of *The Phantom Prince*, 1981.



Woodrow Wilson High School. Photo from *Nova* yearbook, 1961.



9-year-old Ann Marie Burr. Photo source: 'Remembering Victims of Ted Bundy' facebook page.

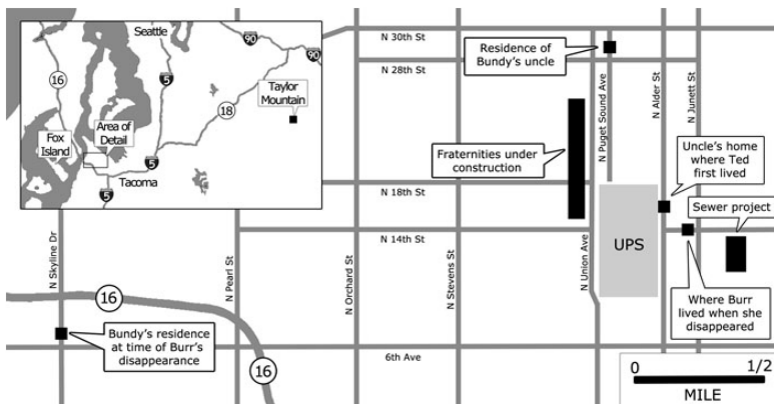
- 1961 -

1961: Richard Bundy born. According to the PIR, Ted said he was closest to his mother and Richard.

Ted enrolls at Wilson High (1202 North Orchard Street, Tacoma). Also according to PIR, Ted advised "that he discontinued dating throughout high school and when queried about this, [...] was unable to offer an explanation. The fact that [...] he didn't date in high school is not necessarily

all that unusual; however, what is unusual is his mother's statement that he dated throughout high school, and she was particularly aware of girlfriends who 'surely liked him, because they were always calling him'."

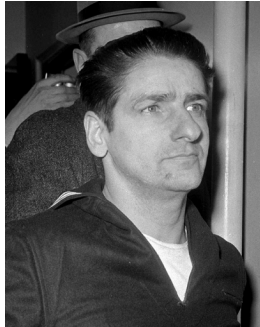
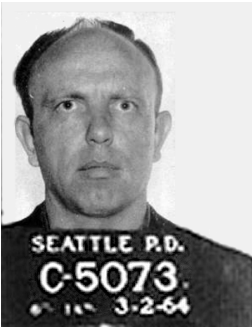
August 31, 1961: Ann Marie Burr is abducted from her Tacoma home, North 14th Street, just off Alder between Cedar and Junett, next to Gustafson's apple orchard. Ted delivered the *Seattle Post-Intelligencer* or *The Tacoma News Tribune* depending on your source. The paper route was only about 40 customers and was spread out over several miles. Often there were several blocks between subscribers. At the time, Tacoma was a much more innocent city, and it was not unusual for kids to ride bikes all summer, particularly to the University of Puget Sound with its summer swimming program open till 9 p.m. and athletic fields where kids played pick-up games of flag football and fly-up. Univ. Puget Sound is about four blocks from the Burr house, and the campus bisected the paper route. To apply for the route, Ted would have had to travel to 6th Avenue and N. Fife Streets, where the office manager was. In Au-



Map showing the relationship between the Burr family and the Bundy family, 1961. Map courtesy Rebecca Morris © 2013.



A 1963 Wilson High yearbook photo showing Ted. Photo public domain.



Left: Harvey Carignan. Right: Albert DeSalvo, 1967. Photos public domain.

those victims were in Washington State around the same time Ted first started killing.

October 27, 1964: Albert Henry DeSalvo is arrested and later confesses to being the Boston Strangler. Ted once told Hugh Aynesworth that his story “was more important than the Boston Strangler’s” (M&A 1989, 197).

gust, the sun usually rose at about 5 a.m. (around time when the kidnapping occurred). It wasn’t total darkness, but a time before people got out of bed. After Ann Marie’s disappearance, Mr. and Mrs. Holt immediately kept a closer rein on Sandi, and Doug was ordered to walk her to Geiger Elementary school when the new school year began (Morris 2013, 93).

- 1962 -

1962: Ted’s sophomore year at Wilson High. Started noticing a perplexing halt to his social development.

October 16-28, 1962: Cuban Missile Crisis.

- 1963 -

November 22, 1963: President John F. Kennedy assassinated by Lee Harvey Oswald in Dealey Plaza, Dallas, Texas.

- 1964 -

March 2, 1964: Harvey Louis Carignan is released on parole from Minnesota State prison. He moves to Seattle, Washington. From late 1972 till his final arrest in Minneapolis on September 24, 1974, he killed at least 5 women, however, he is suspected of killing many more. At least two of

- 1965 -

1965: Ted picked up in Pierce County for suspicion of auto theft and burglary. Record expunged. There is no indication that he was ever confined, but his name was known to juvenile caseworkers (Rule 2006, 11). It is remarkable that



Left: Ted's 1965 Wilson High *Nova* yearbook portrait. Right: Ted in a Political Science class from the same yearbook. Photos public domain.

Ted's parents never said anything about this in later interviews, since police would have surely consulted them over their suspicions.

February 21, 1965: Malcolm X (40) assassinated by Nation of Islam members, Manhattan, New York.

March 1965: Graduates Woodrow Wilson High School with a 3.02 average out of 4.0 (awarded scholarship to the Univ. Puget Sound). In a classmate's copy of the school magazine *Nova*, he wrote an unusual note:

Dearest V.,
The sweetness of the spring time rain runs down the window pain [sic].
(I can't help it. It just flows out)
Theodore Robert Bundy
Peot [sic].



Ted in graduation robes. Photo public domain.



University of Puget Sound. Photo courtesy Vincent Tan © 2015.

March 29, 1965: Reported being in a car wreck the previous Friday night (March 26, 1965); said he had a headache and had scratches on his face.

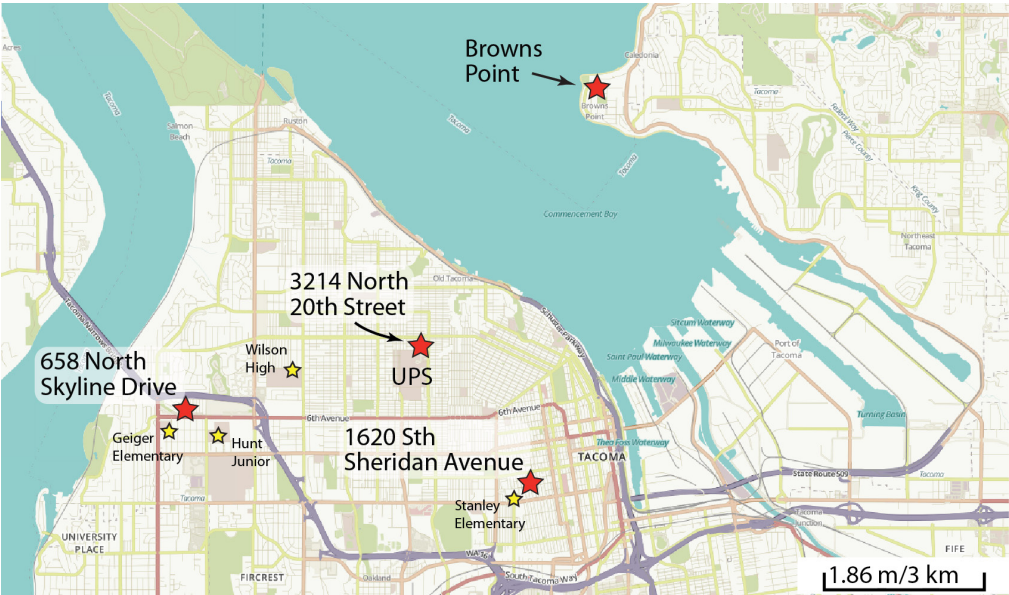
June 1965: Worked for Tacoma City Light as a forklift operator. At night volunteered in a campaign for the House of Representatives.

September 1965: Ends work with Tacoma City Light.



1933 Plymouth Coupe. Photo Public Domain.

September 26, 1965: Bought a 1933 Plymouth Coupe. Enrolled Univ. Puget Sound. To Al Carlisle Ted said he had only one relationship with a girl while at this university. He did say he may have been somewhat hurt by her but could not remember her name nor many details about the event (Psychological Evaluation by Al Carlisle, June 2, 1976, FSA).



Tacoma Bundy residences and schools. Map courtesy OpenStreetMap contributors, 2015.

NOTES

Not much is known about Ted's teenage years. By his own admission, he felt somewhat traumatized over not getting chosen for various team sports. But that would pale into insignificance compared to a more profound awakening in him:

In junior high, everything was fine. Even went to some parties. Nothing I can recall happened that summer before my sophomore year to stunt me or otherwise hinder my progress. But I got to high school and I didn't make *any* progress (M&A 1989, 23).

The progress that Ted is talking about is the maturation of emotions, a sense of growing into adulthood, of understanding the complex and often arbitrary rules of the adult world. This perplexing halt to his social development foreshadowed the prefrontal cortical deficit that would plague him for the rest of his life. In normal teenagers, the prefrontal cortex usually struggles with suppressing the tumultuous hormonally driven behavior of the limbic system, but this eventually settles down as teenagers become adults. Ted never went through this process properly. His prefrontal cortex failed to completely mature, leaving him exposed to more vulnerable to teenage-like symptoms even as his body matured into an adult.

Two activities during Ted's teenage years usually receive attention. The first is skiing. Ted described how it enabled him to temporarily join a social group. He engineered his way into their circle by master-minding a crude forgery scheme by bleaching and dying color-coded ski-lift passes. No one ever found out. Nor did anyone find out that Ted had stolen his ski equipment. We will never know, but we can reasonably assume that these two cases represent just the tip of the iceberg when it comes to Ted's thievery. In support of this, we have Rule's discovery that Ted was picked up at least twice in Pierce County on suspicion of burglary and auto theft in 1965 (Rule 2006, 11). Since there are no reports from his school mates regarding this behavior we can also assume that Ted kept it totally secret. Thus, Ted had learned from a very early age to keep a part of himself hidden from those who personally knew him.

The second activity is that during his senior year at Woodrow Wilson High School, Ted worked as a volunteer in a local political race. Ted's under-developed prefrontal cortex, while it hindered his emotional development, did provide him with the benefit of being constantly open to tangential learning. In Ted's own words:

[...] politics gave me a lot. It gave me a direction and an education in a lot of things tangential to politics – things I needed to know. In politics you can move between the various strata of society. You can talk and mingle with people to whom otherwise you would have absolutely no access (M&A 2000, 25–6).

Ted's statement reveals an enormous amount about himself, things that he himself was aware of. His acute sense of class, his desire to move among the affluent and respected, and the nature of political gatherings and their formal communica-

tion structures that contrasted with the unstructured and spontaneous communication patterns of everyday social interactions – interactions that on the whole, baffled Ted. In politics, Ted learned that he could be in control.

With the practice of listening to talk-back radio, and now his immersion in politics, Ted had discovered two sources of inspiration that would help him construct what he thought was the right persona to move into adulthood. We will later learn that this first attempt at building a persona would fail when it came to intimate relationships, since talk-back-radio and politics lack opportunities for the actor to spontaneously inject their inner world into the exchange, something that one-to-one intimate relationships fundamentally expose.

Unfortunately, we have no way of knowing what Ted's inner world was like at this time. All we can do is surmise, based on what clues are available. We know he often engaged in theft behavior. The objects he desired were generally things that he could not afford, but more importantly, they were things that he felt raised his class status. Superficiality is the key to understanding this aspect of Ted's personality. His prefrontal cortex, with its under-developed emotional connections (but facility for tangential learning), meant that Ted could acquire many separate instances of civilization's outer trappings but never integrate them into a coherent whole. Acquisition without comprehension. A perfect recipe for loneliness. For loneliness is not a disease of being alone, but of not knowing one's place in the world.

Terry Storwick relates one story that captures the essence of Ted's loneliness at this time. According to Storwick, "We'd be standing in the hallway [at school] and someone would come up to me and say, 'Hey, we're going to have a party Friday. Can you come over?'" Ted would be standing there and he wouldn't be asked. It wasn't that he was singled out for ridicule, but you have to remember that Ted was a very sensitive person – very sensitive" (M&A 1999, 59). Typical for school boys at this age, there'd be lewd and exaggerated claims of sexual desire and conquest, but according to Ted, all of that "went over my head" (ibid). Yet, in interviews later on, Ted admitted that around this time he was also delving into pornography (e.g., Dobson interview, January 23, 1989), so we have to assume that he was more familiar with the machinations of sex than he let on. In terms of his inner world, we might be inclined to conclude that Ted probably had a confused idea about sex, but plenty of desire. His mind was full of images of explicit sex scenes, which fueled that desire, but without the confidence or the experience to express himself, to chat a girl up sociably, he would have turned that energy back onto himself. A self admission during his final interview with Lewis supports this argument (Nelson 1994, 276-7):

Ted: In my high school years I was really out of touch with my peers—really out of touch. I mean, my old neighborhood friends went on to groups, and high school, being [part of] a bigger community—and I was sort of just stuck. I spent a lot of time with myself.

Lewis: Why were you out of touch?

Ted: I don't know. The summer—something happened, something, I'm not sure what it was ... Well, I would think that, at the time I wasn't thinking about anything

illegal or criminal or aggressive necessarily. I would fantasize about coming up to some girl sunbathing in the woods, or something innocuous like that.

Lewis: And what, and you're doing what?

Ted: I'm just watching her ... It was basically voyeuristic. I mean, among my sexual activities was to look out of my bedroom window, which looked down into the neighbor's bathroom ... Nothing really harmful or threatening, but things which, because I was totally on my own and wasn't sharing this with anybody—nobody could say, "Gee, that's weird, don't do that" you see. I mean, for instance, over a two-or three-year period, I would go out at night, a warm night—we had some woods in back of our house—I would take off all my clothes and run around the woods.

Lewis: When you were thirteen, fourteen?

Ted: Yeah, again, I wasn't flashing on anybody or trying to imagine me stalking anybody, but it was just an innocent kind of sport. So there's nothing at this point that's bad, but I see what was happening. I was beginning to get involved in what they call, develop a preference for that they call, autoerotic sexual activity. And that's exactly what it was.

And "even more inflammatory" as Ted put it, is that around this time—when he was running around the woods naked, masturbating—he was simultaneously getting deeply into detective magazines, absorbing pictures of dead bodies. So we can speculate with relative confidence that this is where Ted's fascination with sex and violence had its genesis, at least in its conscious form.

What Ted does not talk about until much later, is that behind this exposure to sex and violence, lay a deeper strata to his psyche, a driving factor that neither he, nor anyone else will ever adequately explain, namely, his "voices." They must have been present during his teens, otherwise he would not have developed into a serial murderer. But by "voices," we are not implying schizophrenia. As discussed in the introduction, true schizophrenics generally hear voices *external* of their bodies. It would be more appropriate to consider an obsessive compulsive (OCD) pseudo diagnosis for Ted, because his voices were most probably an amplified version of the internal dialogue that every normal human being has. Ted said that these voices became particularly strong when he was drinking heavily, and although he would not admit it, when he was smoking cannabis. Cannabis in particular is linked with the amplification of internal dialogue, and in some cases—in vulnerable individuals—it can lead to psychosis, with the temporary hearing of voices external of the body. Ted never admitted to this experience, so we have to assume his phenotype was an internally derived phenomenon. We do not know if Ted smoked cannabis during his teens, but there is a possibility, given that he was living at a time when psychotropic agents in general were becoming more available and accessible. Certainly, by the time he graduated from high school in 1965 at the age of 18, from then on, or shortly afterwards, we can assume Ted was a regular user. Accordingly, we should not underestimate the role cannabis played in facilitating the elaboration of Ted's fantasies vis-a-vis his "voices." By marrying sex and violence during his teenage years, once he started using the drug in early adulthood, his brain was ripe for expressing ideas about women "in a very hateful manner, in a very angry, in a very malicious manner" (Nelson 1994, 286-7).

In presenting a prefrontal cortical model of Ted, then adding OCD, there is a danger of building up a multi-layered cake of diagnoses. We are not specifically adding OCD to Ted's neurological model. What we are suggesting is that his prefrontal deficit expressed a heterogeneous phenotype, which includes the expression of OCD-like components. In support of this, numerous studies show clear linkages between prefrontal cortical dysfunction and OCD (e.g., Huey et al., 2008, Saxena and Rauch, 2000). Recent research demonstrates the role of the orbitofrontal cortex in reward, the anterior cingulate cortex in error detection, the basal ganglia in affecting the threshold for activation of motor and behavioral programs, and the prefrontal cortex in storing memories of behavioral sequences. Notable is that two of these areas, the prefrontal cortex and anterior cingulate gyrus, form the foundation for our neurobehavioral model of Ted. In explaining Ted's steps to becoming a serial killer, we have the difficult task of explaining why he persisted in pursuing the singular line of murder when at any given time along the branching path of his life he could have chosen otherwise. Our brief discussion about Ted's teenage years leaves us with little choice but to consider the very real possibility that Ted was already contemplating murder by the time he finished high school. Bill Hagmaier, who knew Ted better than anyone, said:

If Ted Bundy is to be believed, and evidence from very hard-working detectives is accurate, he didn't kill his first victim until he was 27 years old. Most serial killers would have struck long before that. Bundy was killing people psychologically, he didn't want to get caught, he recognized [...] the risk at hand, but then when he lost his temper and killed his first victim at 27, then all the things he had dreamed about doing, started to materialize (ViCAP, 2002).

Hagmaier suggests that Ted began "killing people psychologically" a long time before he actually acted out the desire. How long we cannot be sure, but since he obliquely admitted to starting his voyeuristic activities during his teens (looking down into the neighbor's bathroom), and was reading pornography around the same time, we can safely assume his rape fantasies, however immature they were, were already well underway. When you add the detective magazines into the mix, it seems reasonable to assume he may have first started thinking about murder around the time he left school in 1965, aged 18. If that slip of the tongue he made to Keppel in his final interview before his execution is anything to go by, then he first killed in 1972, which more realistically gives him an age of 25 and a period of 7 years of incubation, a period we will examine more closely in the young adult chapter. The key point here is that Ted pursued his agenda methodically for at least that 7-year period. Such extraordinary application calls for an equally extraordinary motivation. From this perspective, it seems that somewhere behind his behavior lay an obsession, and perhaps a compulsion. Something that was sufficiently powerful to swamp any ethical considerations and make Ted choose murder over life.

References

- Dobson, J. (1989). Fatal Addiction. www.focusonthefamily.com.
- Huey, E. D., Zahn, R., Krueger, F., Moll, J., Kapogiannis, D., et al. (2008). A psychological and neuroanatomical model of obsessive-compulsive disorder. *The Journal of Neuropsychiatry and Clinical Neurosciences*, 20(4), pp. 390–408.
- Michaud, S. & Aynesworth, H. (1989). *Ted Bundy: Conversations with a Killer* (Paperback ed.). New York: Signet.
- Michaud, S. G. & Aynesworth, H. (1999). *The Only Living Witness: The True Story of Serial Sex Killer Ted Bundy*. Laguna, TX: Authorlink.
- Nelson, P. (1994). *Defending the Devil*. New York: William Morrow and Company, Inc.
- Rule, A. (1980). *The Stranger Beside Me*, 2006 revised edition. London: Time Warner Books.
- Saxena, S. & Rauch, S. L. (2000). Functional neuroimaging and the neuroanatomy of obsessive-compulsive disorder. *Psychiatry Clinical North America*, 23(3), pp. 563–86.
- ViCAP. (2002). ViCAP: On The Trail Of Violence.

Young Adult Years (1966-1971)



Original 1958 VW bug. Photo public domain.

- 1966 -

April 1966: Univ. Puget Sound last session ends. Sometime shortly before May Ted sold his Plymouth Coupe and bought a '58 VW bug.

June 23, 1966: Queen Ann Hill, Seattle, Lisa E. Wick (20) and Lonnie Trumbull (20, deceased) were bludgeoned as they slept in their basement apartment. Wikipedia incorrectly states that Ted worked at the nearby Queen

Ann Hill Safeway at the time. Ted did not start working at the Queen Ann Hill Safeway until April 12, 1968. Detective Sergeant Herb Arnold said a blood-stained piece of wood three inches square and 18 inches long, apparently taken from a nearby garage, was found in a nearby vacant lot and was believed to have been the weapon used in the beatings. Purses of the two girls were found but police declined to say where. Both girls were found in their nightclothes in their beds, the walls spattered with blood, when their roommate, Joyce Bowe, came home in the morning around 9:30 a.m. When she returned the front door was unlocked and a light was on. Neither girl was sexually assaulted. Both had been repeatedly clubbed on the head. Evidence led detectives to believe the attack may have occurred as late as 3:00 a.m. instead of before midnight as was first estimated. An employee of United Airlines said he telephoned Miss Wick about flight plans around 11:45 p.m. The employee said Miss Wick took the information and said she would relay it to Miss Trumbull, who was asleep. Lisa Wick, barely alive, was taken to the King County Hospital. She had multiple fractures of the skull and was listed as critical. There was the suggestion the only reason Miss Wick survived the attack was she was wearing hair rollers to bed, which may have cushioned some of the blows. Police were using "every available man" in the manhunt Police Chief Frank Ramon said.

June 24, 1966: Police develop a "vengeance theory" of the stewardess attack saying they have no evidence the crime was committed by a casual prowler.

June 25, 1966: Terry Allman, a deputy sheriff who lives on Vashon Island, said he had been with Miss Trumbull on Wednesday, leaving the apartment about 5 p.m. He talked with her by phone around 10 p.m. A neighbor George Stoss said he heard an automobile roar away from the apartment building shortly after midnight and "at the same time I heard someone scream." One neighbor said she heard a car; others



Lisa E. Wick as she appeared for United Airlines. Photo source *The Owosso Argus-Press*, June 24, 1966 .



Lonnie Trumbull as she appeared for United Airlines. Photo source *The Owosso Argus-Press*, June 24, 1966 .

heard nothing. Police questioned a 17-year old youth about the attack Friday, but released him after he passed a lie-detector test.

June 29, 1966: At least six lie detector tests were conducted but no clues were turned over to help solve the case, according to Captain Paul Lee, Chief of Seattle Homicide Division.

June 30, 1966: A bartender, Homer Sims, told police a man “about 30 years old” was in his tavern about 8:00 or 9:00 p.m. asking directions on June 15. Sims said the man had a city map and asked how to reach the 2400 block on 8th Avenue where Trumbull and Wick were attacked. According to Lieutenant Frank Moore, investigators were not that “excited about this lead.”

July 15, 1966: Police develop a composite sketch of the assailant and a witness who could identify him. Miss Wick told detectives *she was awake* when the intruder bludgeoned Miss Trumbull to death in her sleep. He then turned on her. According to Wick, the assailant was white, about 30 years old, 5 feet 10 inches tall and weighed about 165 pounds. He had thinning blond hair. She could not say whether she had ever seen the man before, however, she said she could identify the

man if she saw him again.

July 20, 1966: Lisa Wick is shown photos of suspects, including one of Richard Speck, a suspect in the slaying of eight student nurses in Chicago.

September 1966: Ted accepted for transfer to Univ. Wash..

September 3, 1966: Lisa Wick leaves hospital.

September 26, 1966: Ted enrolls and attends University of Washington. Studies Chinese. Lives in McMahon Hall dormitory. Larry Foster, one of Ted’s clustermates and a senior



McMahon Hall, circa 1967. Photo courtesy Univ. Wash. Campus Photograph Collection.



Univ. Wash. campus entrance coming in from 12th Avenue NE. Photo courtesy Vincent Tan © 2015.

that year said: “[He was a] normal guy, good dresser, very personable. [...] His [quirks] were no greater than those of others.” Foster remembers his roommate as a staunch Republican, with a love of skiing but as yet undecided on a career path. Foster would occasionally offer Bundy words of advice about his future after graduating. “I suggested the military as a place to get some further skills and then see what he wanted to do,” Foster said.



Nancy Leitner (undated, left) and Pamela Nater (undated, right). Photos public domain.

October 2, 1966: Nancy Leitner (21) and Pamela Nater (20) disappear from a skin diving club picnic in the Alexander Springs Recreation Area of the Ocala National Forest in Lake County, Florida. Gerard John Schaefer would be later linked to their murder. The bones of Leitner and Nater were found in Ocala National Forest in 2007, twelve years after Schaefer was murdered in prison on December 3, 1995.

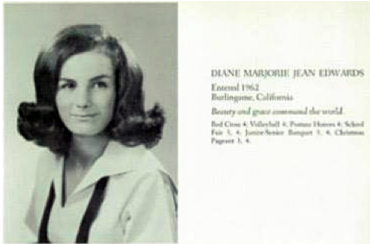


Gerard John Schaefer, July 23, 1972 mugshot that led authorities to the belated realization they had caught a serial killer. Photo public domain.

December 31, 1966: Last attendance Univ. Wash. for the year. Moves out of McMahon Hall into 5015 16th Northeast, Seattle.

- 1967 -

March 1967: Meets Diane Edwards at Snoqualmie while skiing. Snoqualmie opens at start of December. According to Rule, Ted met her in Spring 1967, perhaps last snow – February-March. The relationship develops through the Summer of Love – August 1967. In a personal communication to Carlisle in 1975, Diane Edwards said of Ted:



Yearbook photo of Diane Marjorie Jean Edwards (undated). Source unknown. Photo public domain.

He was pitifully weak when we argued. This was my main criticism of him after a year and a half of our relationship. He kowtowed to me. He wasn't strong. He wasn't real masculine. If I got mad at him because of something he did he felt apologetic about it. He wouldn't stand up for himself. There was no use getting mad because he didn't react. And, the things I primarily got mad at him for were that he

lied when it wasn't necessary that he had to. He would say something he knew would sound good to me rather than telling me the truth (Carlisle 2014, 48).



Diane drove a 1967 Ford Mustang. Photo public domain.

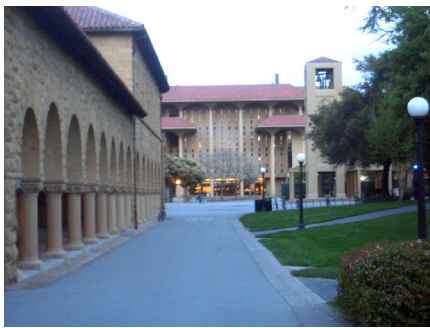
Ted talked about Diane on February 20, 1978, after his final arrest.



Seattle skyline, circa 1967. Photo public domain.



Ted and Diane, presumably circa late 1973. Photo public domain.



Stanford Univ. library, San Francisco. Photo courtesy Liam Quin: "March/April 2006 – Redwood City, America" (2006).

Patchen: Tell us about Diane Edwards.

Bundy: We were incompatible. [...] she wanted a great deal more. [...] she was a perfectionist of a kind. She wanted everything just right. She was the only child of her father who I never got to know that well. [I met him only] on two or three occasions. [...] I think we were both about the same age, she maybe a few months older. [...] She could dance good. [...] She was a model at one time. [...] We were thinking about getting married. [...] We talked about children. [...] I think she had reservations about having children. She wanted other

things at the time. [...] The last time I saw her was, I think it was January 1st, 1974, because after that she lived in San Francisco. [...] Diane knew about Liz. [...] She was a tall girl, she was about five ten. Uh, she had dark hair, long dark hair. Very beautiful.

Chapman: [...] you called [Diane] and she rejected you?

Bundy: Diane was very subconscious about being married. [...] the engagement situation falling through [...] it had her upset. Okay? She rejected me. I don't care how it turned out. [...] it was a relief. (Florida State Archives, Tape #2, Side # 1, Part D, February 20, 1978).

March 17, 1967: Withdraws from Univ. Wash.

June 1967: Attends summer school Stanford Univ. on a scholarship, does intensive studies in Chinese. Compulsive voyeurism starts around this time.

June 25, 1967: Ted arrives San Francisco. Address Palo Alto.

June 26, 1967: Attends Stanford.

July 1967: Attends Stanford.

July 8, 1967: Ted has dinner in San Francisco with Diane Edwards. When Ted drops Diane at the airport for her return to Seattle and studies at Univ. Wash. the next day, he still feels he cannot give up on the relationship.

Later in July, 1967: Ted flies to Seattle for one night to try and salvage his relationship with Diane. The effort fails and they break up.



Seattle Yacht Club (July 20, 2015). Photo courtesy Vincent Tan © 2015.

August 1967: Stanford studies end; attains a “C” grade. In Seattle, Ted is befriended by an elderly lady, Mrs. Ferris, a pastry chef at the Seattle Yacht Club. She helps him get some menial jobs. In a personal communication to Carlisle in 1975, Mrs. Ferris had this to say about Ted:

I’m a woman 70 years old and I know what goes on but he doesn’t have it. I don’t know if he was high on dope or liqueur, but he was sure a peculiar person. He was going with a girl from San Francisco. He would portray himself to be a really big politician to try to get in good with her family. He sometimes used a British accent. He borrowed Havilland China and sterling silver and linen from me and had her there for dinner and he was going to show her what a fine cook he was, and what a man he would be around the house. He got her drunk and they spent the night there.

He borrowed my car several times to go out on night trips. I was scared to death when he was gone. Something was up because he just wasn’t running true to form of where he was going or what he was doing.

He got him a job [sic] at the Olympic Hotel and went through the men’s employee lockers and found some old tuxedo waiter’s clothes (pants, coat, etc.). He got them fixed up and would dress himself up as if he were the headwaiter in some restaurant. He lived for a short while with an elderly couple and they were going to go to Norway. They finally had to ask him to move.

I helped him get a job at Safeway for a short while and he just quit, not even going back to work to tell them he was leaving.

He borrowed \$100.00 from me. I tried to get it back but he always had some reason why he couldn’t pay me back right then. He never did pay me back. I talked to his mother once and asked her if she would appeal to him as a man to return the \$100.00 I loaned to him. His mother said, “He doesn’t live here anymore and we’re not responsible for anything he does.”

He is a very, very peculiar boy. He was just kind of sneaking around. He’d be on the telephone when you’d least expect him to be. He would tell you he was going to be one place and he would be somewhere else. He left the city on a plane and he said he was going to Colorado to be a ski instructor there. Something happened and he came back.

He went to Pennsylvania and drove his uncle’s Cadillac and came back flat broke looking for a job. All in all, he’s just a very weird boy.

I worked with him at the Seattle Yacht Club when he was a busboy and I got him a job at the Olympic Hotel. Then he got a job at Safeway. Then he got into politics and

I called and told [his supervisors] he was a strange boy and a little on the crooked side.

He was six weeks at the Yacht Club and they let him go. He wasn't supposed to eat the food, but he was always in the pantry eating all the fresh foods and whipped cream he could get and all the fancy foods he could eat. He would grab them and take them to his locker.

He had kind of a running game of his own. He didn't have too much to do with his family. He borrowed my car a couple of times saying he was going home. Ted never talked about his family or showed much affection for them. He spent quite a bit of time at a friend's house, an antique dealer who had been in prison and this guy went back at least once after Ted knew him.

Ted told me he was studying Chinese at the University of Washington. When the staff seemed to get close he told me he was going to skip out and go to Taiwan.

I have been suspicious from the day those two girls were killed at Lake Sammamish with that "Ted." I remember him seeing him in an Albertson's store in Green Lake with a cast on his arm. I was going to do something about it, but living alone I was afraid to do more than what I had already done.

He seemed to have mental problems. He had ways of getting money. He had a very expensive overcoat with a fur collar that came from the Yankee Peddler, one of the men's best dress shops in the University District. He had a key to the men's dormitory at the University of Washington long after he was no longer a student there. He carried the key with him and used to go in there and sleep on the lounge couches when he didn't have any place to go and he would take clothing and things from the dorm.

I was willing to give him the benefit of the doubt because I felt he needed help. I felt there was something very, very wrong in his life and it seemed that he was quite an unloved child. That's the way that it hit me. I just kind of felt I could help him, but I finally decided I was just knocking my head against a wall and I just had to stop it and I couldn't have him taking my car and keeping it out until 3:00 am or 4:00 am in the morning and telling me, "I'll be back at midnight" and me sitting up waiting.

He told me he was going on trips. He would be gone all these hours and would come back all hepped up. He did this two or three times. I thought he might be trafficking dope (Carlisle 2014, 44-47).

In a separate report Mrs. Ferris informed investigators that Ted would often befriend older people, gain their confidence, then as an apparent favor, take items to the junkyard to sell, or take their shopping lists to the store, often not returning with food or money (KCA, February 21, 1978). In the same report, claims are made that Ted experimented with bisexuality around this time.

September 1967: Starts studying Urban Planning and Sociology at Univ. Wash. but is failing. Ted informs the university he will not be attending the winter semester of 1968. Continues work at Seattle Yacht Club. Ted's job description was he "parked cars." He often drove people from the club home who were too drunk to drive. Lives at 5015 16th N.E. Has 873 N. 16th on registration card for Univ. Wash..

End 1967: Ted starts considering himself the actor rather than spectator in his violent sexual fantasies according to Polly Nelson and Dorothy Lewis (Nelson 1994, 279). According to an un-named "intimate" friend of Ted's who wanted the story told:

“Ted believed that he was demonically possessed. It began in college. He called it ‘the Beast.’ it was not your typical demon. It spoke to him, but it had no human emotion, no conscience. At first, he was afraid. The demon was totally contrary to his make-up. But then he conditioned himself to it and got so he could tolerate it. Finally, Ted gave himself over. He joined the demon and got to like pornography. He believed that other serial killers were also possessed. He struggled with the demonic influence, marked by lust and feelings of violence, even in prison. But through prayer and reading God’s word, he subdued the demon somewhat. However, he never felt that the Beast ever left him entirely” (Nobile 1989, 45).



3214 North 20th Street, Tacoma. The Bundy family was still living here when Ted was arrested in 1975. Photo courtesy Kristina Erickson © 2016.

- 1968 -

1968: Ted’s parents move to 3214 North 20th Street, Tacoma. The term “sociopathic personality” gives way to “personality disorder, antisocial type” (Tanay 2010, 128).

January 1968: Ends works at the Seattle Yacht Club.

January 18, 1968: Registered for Winter quarter Univ. Wash. but withdrew. Travels to San Francisco. Flew to Denver, skied Aspen and Colorado. Then went on to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania and Fayetteville, Arkansas, to see his musical professor uncle Jack Cowell who had moved there to take up a position at the Univ. Arkansas. Ted’s cousin Edna remembers his stop in Fayetteville: “He asked my parents for money. I don’t remember if they gave him any,” she said. Ted stayed a few days, Edna Cowell took him out for a meal, to a 1950s-style drive-in, and then he continued his trip east. Ted went on to NY and Burlington, Vermont, where, according to Rule, he got an extract of his birth certificate and learns for certain that his mother is Louise and that he is illegitimate (Rule 2006, 16). Spends two nights in New York and pays his first visit to a strip joint. He then drove back to Philadelphia, Arkansas and Tacoma.

January 26, 1968: Linda Kay Slawson (19) of Aloha is last seen selling encyclopedias in the Portland, Oregon, in the neighborhood where Jerome Henry Brudos lived with his wife, Ralphene, and their two kids. Brudos lured her into his garage, bludgeoned her senseless, then strangled her to death. Afterwards he told his wife to take the kids out to eat hamburgers. While his family was out, he dressed Slawson in high heels and lingerie, cut off one of her feet and put it in the freezer. That night as



Linda Slawson (undated). Photo source: findagrave.com.



Jerry Brudos (undated). Photo public domain.

his family slept, he tied her body to an automobile transmission and dumped her in the Willamette River. Slawson's body was never recovered, but Brudos would later tell police he killed her and threw her body into the Willamette River from the Wilsonville bridge on Interstate 5, Oregon. He had a fetish for women's shoes from the age of five and reportedly attempted to steal the shoes of his first grade teacher. He also had a fetish for women's underwear and claimed he would steal them from neighbors as a child. He spent his teens in and out of psychotherapy and mental hospitals. He began to stalk local women as a teenager, knocking them down or choking them unconscious, and fleeing with their shoes.

February-March 1968: Ted back in Seattle. Gets a job at the Seattle Olympic Hotel as a Bus Boy, but is let go for suspected thievery after only one month.



The Olympic Hotel, Seattle (now the Fairmont-Olympic Hotel). Photo rights obtained. Image dated October 10, 2010.



Captain Herb Swindler. Photo source: *The Stranger Beside Me* (Rule, 2006).

March 1968: Diane Edwards totally breaks off relationship with Ted after she discovered he used her money and credit cards to buy things for himself.

April 1968: Appointed Seattle chairman and assistant chairman of the New Majority for Nelson Rockefeller, and wins trip to Miami for the Republican National Convention. Dates and pets Cathy Swindler, Seattle Police Crimes Against Person's Unit Captain Herb Swindler's daughter. Sometime later, Richard Larsen quoted Cathy as saying: "Ted Bundy was a figure that people met and loved. I mean, I thought I loved Ted Bundy. Not totally in a romantic way ... but in terms of being moved by what he said and his feelings for other humans beings ... if you know him, you can't help but have a great deal of affection for him as a human being" (Larsen 1980, 7).

April 4, 1968: Martin Luther King Jr. assassinated by James Earl Ray in Memphis, Tennessee.

April 12, 1968: Starts work as a "stocker" at Queen Ann Hill Safeway, 2100

Queen Anne Avenue North. Befriends ‘Richard’, an ex-con, drug dealer and thief. First reference to Ted’s use of cannabis (Kendall 1981, 34).



Panorama of Queen Ann Hill Safeway, Seattle. Ted worked here for a while then stopped abruptly, without explanation. Photo courtesy Vincent Tan © 2015.

June 1968: Diane Edwards graduates at the Univ. Wash.

July 1968: Stephanie Vikko (16, no image) is reported missing in Portland, Oregon. Brudos is the leading suspect. There are no photos or further information relating to Vikko until her remains are found on March 18, 1969.



Art Fletcher (undated). Photo public domain.

July 26, 1968: Stops going to work at Safeway.

September 1968: Works as driver for Art Fletcher, a Republican nominee for lieutenant governor. By his own account, loses virginity to an older woman (just before turning 22) while totally inebriated.

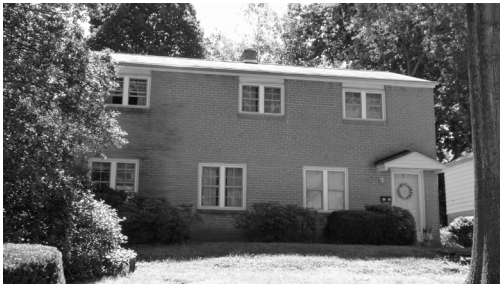
October–November 1968: Works in a Seattle department store selling shoes.



Jan Whitney (undated). Photo public domain.

November 25, 1968: Brudos victim Jan Whitney (23), a Univ. Oregon student of McMinnville, is last seen in Eugene, Oregon. Her car was later found abandoned at a rest stop along Interstate 5 between Salem and Albany.

December 1968: Ted arrives in Philadelphia, takes a room at 4039 South Warner Street, Lafayette Hill, Sam Cowell’s new residence. Starts visiting New York porn houses along 42nd Street.



4039 South Warner Street, Lafayette Hill, Philadelphia. Photo courtesy Karen Valentine © 2013.

- 1969 -

January 1969: Enrolls for one semester Temple University, Philadelphia. According to Al Carlisle, Ted chose Temple because a person could get a law degree there without first needing a bachelor’s degree. The university was located in an area that had a lot of street crime and gang violence. The new buildings had no windows.



Campus scene at Temple University, circa 1960s. Photo public domain.



42nd Street New York, 1966. Photo public domain.



Rogers' rooming house (4143 12th Avenue N.E. 19 July 2015). Ted lived on the second floor in the southwest corner (top right). Photo courtesy Spencer Wallace © 2016.



Karen Sprinker. (undated). Photo source: find-a-grave.com.

There was a guard by some of the doors, and playgrounds had barbed wire around them. Ted's goal was to study the nature of student populations to find a way to get the community involved in change. But Ted couldn't concentrate. He skipped classes, claiming he was depressed. In fact, he had hoped the change of place would solve his "problem" but he quickly realized it wouldn't. He would often go out in the evenings and stalk women. By this time he'd learned to do it without arousing suspicion. He is reported to have stayed with an aunt on his mother's side while he studied.

Through February 1969: Continues studies at Temple University. In his last interview with Lewis and Nelson on January 23, 1989, Ted relates how he bought a fake mustache, fake hair, hair dye, and registered in a seedy motel under a false name in New York while visiting the famous flesh spots on 42nd Street. He worked up a plan to follow some woman in some hotel to

her room and rush in on her and rape her (Nelson 1994, 281).

Late February 1969: Approaches a woman in Ocean City, New Jersey, tries to abduct her but she escapes.

March 1969: Returns to Washington State. Leaves Univ. Wash., rents a room at 4143 12th Avenue N.E. University District. Landlords, Freda Rogers, an elderly woman who, along with her husband Ernst, owned a neat, white two-story frame house. Ted rented out a large room in the southwest corner of the house.

He ended up living there from March/May 26, 1969 – September 1, 1974. In that time he helped Ernst who was ailing with the heavy chores and gardening, a promise he kept. The house is only a few blocks from the Univ. Wash. campus.

March 18, 1969: Stephanie Vikko's remains are found in a wooded area northwest of Forest Grove, Oregon.

March 27, 1969: Brudos victim Karen Sprinker (19) is last seen alive in the Meier & Frank parking lot, downtown Salem, Oregon. Sprinker was a medical student studying at Oregon State University.



Sharon Wood (undated). Photo public domain.



Linda Salee (undated). Photo public domain.

The cause of her death was determined to be asphyxiation. Both her breasts had been sliced off and, although she was still wearing the clothing she had on the last time anyone saw her alive, her bra had been changed to a black one that was too big for her. The cups had been stuffed with paper.

April 21, 1969: Brudos encounters Sharon Wood (24) in a parking garage at Portland State University. Sharon attempted to fend off Jerry's attack by biting his thumb. Jerry beat her unconscious but an oncoming car caused him to flee the scene of the crime. Police failed to draw a connection between this event and the previous disappearance of women in the area.

April 22, 1969: Brudos potential victim Gloria Jean Smith (15, no image) is nearly abducted while walking near Parrish Middle School, Salem, Oregon. Smith eventually identifies Brudos as the man who attempted to kidnap her and take her to a green Volkswagen Karmann Ghia, a car later identified as belonging to Brudos' mother. Jerry also encountered Liane Brumley (14). He attempted to abduct her into his car but she screamed and escaped. There are no known photos of these girls.

April 23, 1969: Brudos victim Linda Dawn Salee (22) of Beaverton is last seen alive at the Lloyd Center parking lot in Portland, Oregon.

Sometime in May 1969: Ted drove down and stayed with friends for 2-3 weeks in San Francisco. According to Rule, Ted sneaks up behind Diane Edwards in San Francisco and surprises her.

May 10, 1969: The body of Brudos victim Linda Salee is found in the Long Tom River near Monroe, Oregon, weighted down. She had been strangled and raped and a cloth was tied around her neck.

May 12, 1969: The body of Brudos victim Karen Sprinker is found in the Long Tom River near Monroe, Oregon, weighted down. An autopsy revealed she had been "smothered or choked."

May 18, 1969: Brudos is identified as a possible suspect after a tip from an Oregon State University student.

May 26, 1969: Brudos' home on the 3100 block of Center Street Northeast, Salem, is searched by police who find copper wire, rope, and pictures of female victims.

May 29, 1969: Brudos is arrested on a charge of armed assault related to the April 22 incident with Gloria Smith.

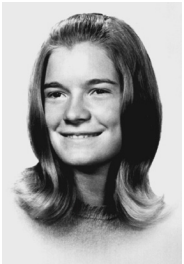
May 30, 1969: Susan Davis (19) and Elizabeth Perry (19) were stabbed to death near Somers Point, New Jersey. The bodies were found by Parkway employee Wood Faunce 20 feet apart hidden under a bed of leaves in dense pine and oak

woods 200 yards from Milepost 31.9 on Garden State Parkway in Egg Harbor Township, just by the bridge over Patcong Creek, north of the Somers Point/Ocean City exit. Susan Davis was nude, and her clothes were in a pile near her. Elizabeth



Susan Davis (undated). Photo public domain.

Perry was dressed except for her underwear, which was missing. The coroner said the bodies were too decomposed to determine whether they had been sexually assaulted, but did determine they had eaten breakfast about an hour before they were murdered. Both had been stabbed with a penknife. Perry died of a penetrating stab wound to her right lung; she also had stab wounds in her abdomen and side of her neck. Davis died of a wound in her neck that cut her larynx; she also had wounds on the left side of her abdomen and right side of her neck. Police found a skin diver's watch near the scene believed to belong to the murderer. A jacket bearing the name 'Susan Davis' was also found nearby.



Elizabeth Perry (undated). Photo public domain.

The girls had stayed in Syben House, Ocean City, since the Tuesday before. They drove off at 04:30 "to beat Friday traffic." Had breakfast at Somers Point Diner. A state trooper found their powder-blue convertible abandoned by the Parkway two miles north of the Somers Point interchange around noon. The car keys were found tossed a short distance away from the bodies. There was one witness who says that they may have picked up a young man with his arm in a sling, who was hitchhiking. Others think they may have left with two young men who they had met earlier at Somers Point Diner. The bodies were located about 150 yards from the abandoned car at about 1:30 p.m.

Richard Larsen, author of *The Deliberate Stranger*, believes



Ocean City, New Jersey, 1969. Photo public domain.



Map showing where the bodies of Susan Davis and Elizabeth Perry were found in relation to Ocean City, New Jersey. Bing Aerial Map image courtesy USGS Earthstar Geographics SIO © Microsoft Corporation.

Ted made the trip in a car borrowed from a Temple University faculty member. Larson also learned that one of the victims had been tied to a tree with her hair. Larsen obtained a tape made in October 1986 wherein Ted talked about his life in Philadelphia in 1969 with forensic psychologist Arthur Norman. Ted explained to Norman that around that time he was getting more and more into violent pornography. He repeated the same story to Lewis the day before his execution, in January 1989. Where his story differed, however, was his description of what happened next.

“Talk about being pushed to the edge,” Ted said on the tape. He began referring to himself in the third person. “So, after being more or less detached from people for a long period ... didn’t have any friends, didn’t really go anywhere, just more or less had school and then sort of entertained himself with his pornographic hobby and drove the shore and watched the beach and just saw young women lined up along the beach,” he said. “You know, it’s like an overwhelming kind of vision, eventually found himself tearing around that place for a couple of days. And eventually, without really planning anything, he picked up a couple of young girls. And ended up with the first time he had ever done it” (*The Enquirer*, May 31, 1993).

Investigator Major Thomas Kinzer, one of the original detectives on the murders, said that two New Jersey detectives tried to interview Ted in 1988 about the Somers Point slayings but he would not discuss the case. Kinzer said he did find Ted’s aunt in Philadelphia, who told him that her nephew could not have gone to the Jersey Shore that weekend because he had been in an auto accident and had a cast on his leg. No record of the accident was found. Kinzer said Ted was such a loner at Temple that no one even remembered him. “All we had was his records,” he said. Some people believe Ted was responsible for the double murder but provide no evidence tying him to the crime, including placing him in Ocean City on the

Murder Probe Focus Shifted Out Of Area

Ann Arbor News, June 4, 1969

Washtenaw County police officials, stymied in their investigation of the murder of five young women in this area in the past two years, were looking today toward New Jersey and Midland, Mich., in the quest for new information.

Ann Arbor police say they are in contact with officers in Egg Harbor Township, N.J., who are investigating the stabbing deaths of Susan Davis of Camp Hill, Pa., and Elizabeth Perry of Excelsior, Minn. The partially nude bodies of the two 19-year-old girls were found yesterday about 150 yards from their abandoned 1966-model car on the Garden State Parkway near Somers Point, N.J. The bodies, covered with leaves, had been stabbed repeatedly.

Local officers say they are also having conversations with Midland County Sheriff's Department detectives who are holding a former Ann Arbor man in the kidnapping, rape and attempted murder of a 24-year-old divorcee. Frank James Anderson, 31, now of Bay City, was arrested shortly after the woman, also of Bay City, was found wandering nude along a country road north of Midland, her body slashed and stabbed.

Assistant Prosecutor Robert Fraser of Midland said Anderson, who lived in Ann Arbor some years ago, followed the woman from a tavern where she works near the Bay City State Park about 3:30 a.m. Sunday. A short time later when the victim left her home to drive to West Branch, her car was forced into a side road where she was struck on the jaw and carried to another car.

Fraser said she was driven into Midland County where she was raped and stabbed numerous times. She remains in critical condition today with eight stab wounds, including a severed trachea and a broken jaw.

After being raped and stabbed, the woman was dragged 100 feet down an old trail and dumped in a clump of bushes, Midland County sheriff's detectives say. She managed to crawl to a gravel pit and later to a Larkin Township road where a motorist spotted her and called deputies.

Ann Arbor police said the attack on the woman resembles the fatal assault on Marilyn Skelton of Romulus, one of two murder victims whose bodies were found in Ann Arbor. Her body was found last March. The body of Joan E. Schell of Plymouth was found in June of last year.

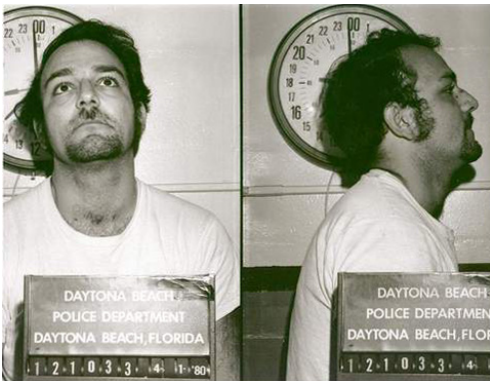
Sheriff's detectives here say the attack also is similar to the one on 13-year-old Dawn Basom of Ypsilanti Township, whose nude and stab-riddled body was found on Gale Rd. in Superior Township last April 16. The first of the five local murder victims, Mary Fleszar, 19-year-old Eastern Michigan University coed, was stabbed more than a dozen times and left on a private dump in July, 1967.

Anderson was paroled from Southern Michigan Prison at Jackson only three months ago after serving 11 years for a rape he committed in Arenac County in 1957. Ann Arbor police say they are checking the possibility that Anderson was in this area at the time of the Skelton or Basom murders as well as the killing in March of U-M Law School Student Mary L. Mixer.

In the New Jersey murders an autopsy has revealed that both Miss Davis and Miss Perry died of multiple stab wounds probably inflicted with a small knife, possibly a pen or a paring knife. The girls, vacationing in Ocean City, N.J., left their rooming house at 4:30 a.m. Friday to drive to the Davis home in Camp Hill, Pa., 135 miles away. The girls had been classmates at Monticello Women's Junior College in Godfrey, Ill. They apparently were ambushed by their killer less than 30 minutes after leaving Ocean City.

New Jersey police have found only a pair of eyeglasses and a watch in their search for clues near the murder scene, and were using electronic detectors today in a further check of the area.

Ann Arbor police and Washtenaw County sheriff's detectives say the method of murder in the New Jersey cases has "remarkable" similarities to the Fleszar-Schell-Skelton-Basom slayings. Local officers say while they are keeping in touch with the New Jersey authorities, there is no plan to send detectives to that state at this time.



Gerald Stano mugshot after his arrest April 1, 1980. Photo public domain.

day that it happened or how he did it.

Ted is not the only suspect. Another candidate is Gerald Stano who gave details of at least 41 murders on the east coast when he was captured in 1980. He often stabbed his victims. According to one policeman, "He thinks about three things: stereo systems, cars, and killing women." Tommy Ray, a homicide detective with the Polk County Sheriff's Office in the 1980s, said Stano exaggerated his record of killings, thinking the resulting investigations would indefinitely delay his execution.

Nevertheless, police took Stano's confession serious enough to send two detectives down to Florida State Prison to interview him, but he didn't know any of the specifics of the case, had the murder taking place on the wrong side of the Parkway, and got all of the details wrong. Stano was basically a coward before men and a thug against women. In his own words: "As for the question, 'What made me kill and



1969 aerial view of Export Pacific Co. Headed by Chauncey L. Griggs, the firm dealt in the lumber export business. Photo courtesy Tacoma Public Library.

kill again,' I can't really answer that, except like this. I would be drinking, and lonely, and thinking about all the couples having fun together, and here I am single having no fun at all. Then I would go out riding around, and I would find a girl walking, and hopefully she would get into my car, but she would end up making some kind of remark about my weight, music or looks. That would turn me into a different person, altogether" (Montane & Kelly 2011, 5).

May-June 1969: Ted works at Export Pacific (otherwise known as Griggs Lumber Mill) in Tacoma, hauling lumber.

June 3, 1969: Brudos is arrested in Salem, Oregon, on three counts of murder for the deaths of Karen Sprinker, Linda Salee and Jan Whitney.

June 27, 1969: Brudos pleads guilty to three counts of murder in the deaths of Sprinker, Salee and Whitney three days before the scheduled start of his trial. Judge Val Sloper hands down three consecutive life sentences. Brudos is transferred to the Oregon State Penitentiary. He died in prison on March 28, 2006.

July 20, 1969: 20:18 UTC. Americans Neil Armstrong and Buzz Aldrin become the first humans to step foot on the moon.

July 27, 1969: The body of Jan Whitney is found tied to a piece of railroad iron in the Willamette River near Independence, Oregon.



Charles Manson (circa 1969). Photo public domain.

Early September 1969: Starts works for Attorney Messenger and Process Service, Seattle.

August 9, 1969: Charles Milles Manson sends Linda Kasabian, Charles 'Tex' Watson, Susan Atkins and Patricia 'Katie' Krenwinkel to the home of Roman Polanski at 10050 Cielo Drive, LA. There, the four brutally murder, by shooting and stabbing, Steven Parent, Sharon Tate (who was pregnant 8 months), Jay Sebring, Wojciech Frykowski and Abigail Folger. Thus ends the decade of love on the west coast.

September 8, 1969: Leigh Hainline Bonadies (25) disappears from Boca Raton, Florida. Gerard Schaefer had complained of her "taunting" him by undressing with her curtains open, so he murdered her. A locket belonging to Bonadies was found among his belongings in his mother's house after his arrest. Bonadies' body was found in Boca Del Mar, Florida in 1978, nine years after her disappearance. However, it was not identified until 2004.

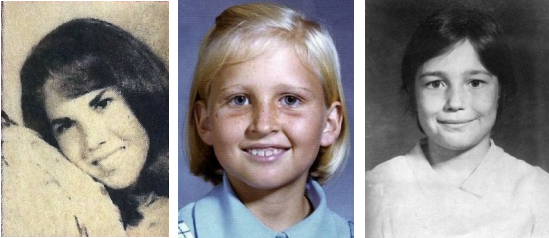
September 30 - October 1, 1969: Ted meets Elizabeth Kloepfer [née Hirst, 25, retained name from divorced husband], University District Bar, Sandpiper Tavern, Seattle. Shortly after they start see-



Leigh Bonadies (undated). Photo public domain.



This nondescript building was formerly known as the Sandpiper Tavern in 1970. Photo courtesy Vincent Tan © 2015.



Left: Carmen Hallock (undated). Middle: Peggy Rahn (circa 1969). Right: Wendy Brown Stevenson (circa 1969). Photos public domain.



Downtown Ogden, May 1973. Ted visited often while he was in a relationship with Liz. Photo public domain.

ing each other more regularly and a serious relationship develops.

October 12, 1969: Ted shows Liz Kloepper his Rogers' rooming apartment. Liz notes that it was "orderly and spotless." Around this time attends traffic school for bad driving record (unverified).

November, 1969: Ted takes Liz and daughter Tina (pseudonym) to his parents' house in Tacoma for dinner.

December 18, 1969: Carmen Marie Hallock (22) was last seen by her sister-in-law in Fort Lauderdale, Florida. Hallock said she had an appointment with a male teacher from the local junior college that evening. Schaefer had a job as student teacher at Stranahan High School, Fort Lauderdale, but his stay there was short-lived.

December 24, 1969: Arrives Liz's parents' place Ogden, Utah after obtaining lift with friends of Mary Chino, Liz's best friend.

December 26, 1969: Ted back in Seattle with Liz.

December 29, 1969: Wendy Brown Stevenson (8) and Peggy Rahn (9) vanish from Pompano Beach, Florida. Schaefer confessed on April 19, 1989, to cannibalizing them. Kenneth Guy Shilts (42), a drifter and known child molester was also a suspect.

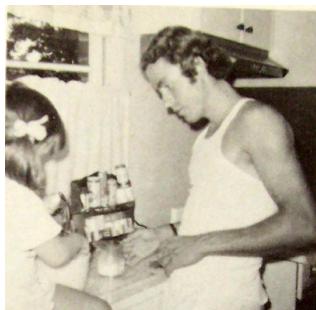
End of 1969: According to Liz:

"Not long after we started spending time together, he came over one night and said he had something very important to tell me, something that might change my opinion of him. Shaking with nervousness, he told me that he was illegitimate. His mother gave birth to him in a home for unwed mothers in the East, he said, and they moved to Tacoma to live with relatives when he was very small. Then she married Johnnie Bundy and had four more children. Johnnie Bundy had adopted him, but Ted knew nothing about it until he was a teenager. It had come as a terrible shock. A cousin had been teasing him about it, and Ted had refused to believe it. The cousin had taken Ted up to the attic and showed him proof: his birth certificate. Ted was upset by his cousin's cruelty and furious with his mother because she had left him unprepared for humiliation at the hands of his cousin. 'She never even had the decency to tell me



The only contemporary photo available of Liz taken sometime between 1970-1974, as shown on the back cover of *The Phantom Prince*.

herself,' he said bitterly. He asked if I thought he should confront his mother about it. I told him no. I could sympathize with her. She had made a mistake when she was young, as I had, but had overcome it and had gone on to make a life for herself. It could not have been easy that many years ago – harder, I was sure, than it was for me when I was pregnant with Tina. 'I'm sure it's a source of a lot of pain for her,' I said, 'and that's probably why she didn't talk about it. It's not important anymore. What's important is that you've got a lot going for you. I love you because you're wonderful.' Ted put his head in his hands and cried."



Ted with Tina Kloepfer as shown on the back cover of *The Phantom Prince*.

- 1970 -

1970: According to the MTR, Ted spent time at 1252 15th Avenue, Marin County (just north of San Francisco), California, during 1970. The closest address this can be associated with is 1252 15th Avenue, San Francisco, opposite the San Francisco Botanical Gardens. There is also a dubious report which can be found on the internet saying he worked at Electro Vector in Forestville (just northeast of Santa Rosa) for a short while in 1970, but no dates are supplied. It could not be January 1970 as Liz said they spent most nights together that month.

January 1970: Ted helps Liz find a new apartment on Green Lake, Seattle.

February 1970: Ted and Liz obtain wedding license for \$5. But before the month is over, Ted tears the license up.

March 1970: Liz finds out Ted was lying for the past six months. He never mentioned that he did not have an undergraduate degree yet.

May 1970: Fired from Attorney Messenger and Process Service because of absence from work (he claimed he was looking after Tina while Liz was at work). Returns to Univ. Wash., contacts campus police and offers his services as an informant. Concurrently, all through May, students protest against the Vietnam war. Seattle in turmoil. Around this time, Ted takes up work as a delivery driver for the Pedline Surgical Company, a family-owned medical supply company. According to Michaud & Aynesworth, Ted once stole a photograph from a doctor's office and was caught. His boss let him off with a "stern lecture." The company didn't know that he was stealing from them too. Among things he took was a container of plaster casting material.

May 4, 1970: Members of the Ohio National Guard fired into a crowd of Kent State University demonstrators, killing four and wounding nine Kent State students.



Eileen Condit.
Photo source *Palm Beach Post*, May 31, 1970.

May 28, 1970: United Airlines Stewardess Eileen Condit (23) is stabbed to death in her Lake Washington cottage. Eileen Condit rented a small house not far from Madison Park near the shores of Lake Washington, several miles east of Seattle's downtown section. The houses were built very close together there because it was a very desirable location, and her next-door neighbors could see into her living room if her drapes weren't pulled, which she seldom did during daylight hours. She was a gamine-like girl with a short "pixie" haircut, friendly and approachable. She was wearing jeans and a sweater over a shorty nightgown when her body was found lying beside a 10-inch long serrated butcher knife taken from her own kitchen. She was stabbed six times. Neighbors said they heard screaming on the night she was murdered but mistook it as roughhousing between friends. Another neighbor saw lights go out and a man leaving Condit's small cottage about 11:30 p.m.

wearing tennis or boat shoes.

June 1970: According to Liz, Ted takes "summer classes" (assumption is Univ. Wash., Far East studies?).

July 1970: Ted saves Terry Storwick's 3 and a 1/2 year old niece, Wendy, from drowning in Green Lake.

August 1970: Schaefer graduates from Florida Atlantic University (BA Geography).

August 20, 1970: Jerry Thompson logged a call from Detective Pat O'Neil from the Sheriff's Office in Sacramento, California, on October 21, 1975. He



The East Green Lake Playground, May 1969. Photo courtesy Seattle Municipal Archives.

informed Thompson that Mr Bundy had a traffic citation on August 20, 1970, in Marin County, the Bay Area, and he was driving an old white Ford pick-up truck. Liz stated that "he purchased a white ford pickup which he has presently in the SLC area about one year ago just before he left for SLC" (Ira Beal report post Liz Kloefer interview, September 17, 1975). In 1970, however, Ted was still living in the U-District in Washington. Moreover, Liz states that they spent most days together through the Summer of 1970, a pattern which continued on into Autumn. At the time authorities were trying to tie Ted into the Santa Rosa hitchhiker murders.

August 29, 1970: Goes on trip with Liz to Wasatch Mountains, Utah. Then Ogden, Utah. Yakima, Washington. Baker, Oregon. Ogden, Utah. Smoked cannabis with "Richard," Ted's ex-con friend (Kendall 1981, 34).

September 4, 1970: Returns with Liz to Seattle.

September 16, 1970: Jeannette Rose Miller (17) was last seen on the Lincoln Bridge, Arlington, Washington State, a little over an hour north by car from Seattle. She was wearing a brown suede jacket with fringe, a long-sleeved white blouse, a white-yellow-blue-black plaid skirt, a gold chain belt and dark blue shoes. She



Jeannette Miller
(undated). Photo
public domain.

has a three-tooth denture plate on the left side of her upper jaw.
September 24, 1970: Changed major from Far East to Psychology at Univ. Wash..

Christmas Day to New Year's 1970: Liz back in Ogden, Utah, with parents alone.

January 1971: Ted back again at the Univ. Wash., takes up studies in psychology. Ronald E. Smith taught Bundy in two psychology courses. "He distinguished himself academically in both courses," Smith said. "He was extremely bright, always well-dressed, very mature." Smith remembers Bundy coming to him

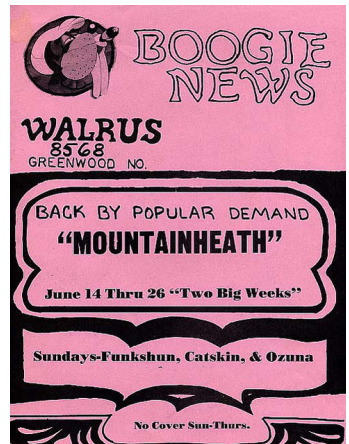
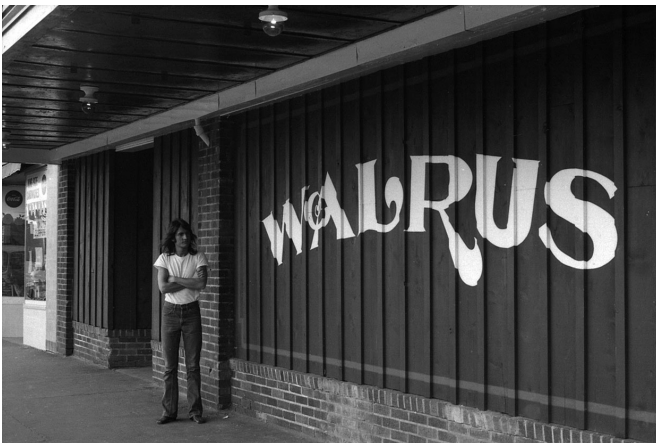


Ronald Smith. (A&E Television Networks, 2007, originally broadcast on A&E's television program *Biography* in 2002.)

with an interest in pursuing an honors thesis on the topic of mental illness and conditional decision making. "He was a tormented soul in a lot of respects, and psychology would appeal to a person like him," Smith said. "He was not unusual for a very clever psychopath individual. He was able to inspire confidence in others and provide a very good front. Nobody who interacted with him actually suspected what was going on." Smith once wrote a reference for Ted which read in part:

Mr. Bundy is undoubtedly one of the top undergraduate students in our department. Indeed, I would place him in the top 1% of undergraduate students with whom I have interacted both here at the University of Washington and at Purdue University (Rule 2006, 19).

March 1971: Liz tells Ted she's getting interest from another man. Ted acts nonchalant, but later follows her to The Walrus Tavern. Liz finds him "shaking like a leaf." He leaves without her.



Left: The Walrus Tavern, 1970. Right: Walrus tavern flyer, 1971. Photos public domain.

June-July 1971 (this date is interpolated): Seattle. According to Nelson and Lewis, Ted follows a woman, picks up two-by-four in a lot, lays in wait, but the woman enters her house before she reaches his hiding spot. A few nights later he saw a woman park her car, walk up to her door, and fumble for her keys. He walked up behind her and struck her with a piece of wood he was carrying. She fell down screaming. He panicked and ran.

July 1971: Liz moves into an apartment closer to Ted's on a tree-lined street close to Univ. Wash. campus (5208 18th N.E.). However around this time she also reports that she and Ted were "out of sync."

July 7, 1971: *Two-Lane Blacktop*, a road movie, is released in New York. A female hitchhiker known only as "the girl" says, as she gets into a car driven by two dudes: "You guys aren't like the Zodiac killers or anything, right?"



Rita Curran (undated). Photo public domain.

July 19, 1971: Rita Curran (24), second grade school teacher at Milton elementary, was found lying nude on the bedroom floor of an apartment on 17 Brooks Avenue, Burlington, Vermont. Two other girls shared the house for the summer (adjacent to the Elizabeth Lund Home for Unwed Mothers). She also worked as a chambermaid at a local motel. Curran was beaten, raped and

strangled. Her body was discovered at about 1 a.m. when one of the girls returned from a date. According to police, she was beaten on the head and face. Detective Lt. Richard Beaumont said his men were checking for a connection between the girl's slaying and several assaults on Univ. Vermont Milton coeds and other women in the Burlington area last winter. Municipal records note that a person named "Ted" was bitten by a dog that week (Rule 1980, 508). There are no records of Ted travelling to the east coast for July 1971. There are no records of Ted travelling to the east coast for July 1971. Liz makes no mention of it in her book. The "son of a very prominent Burlington family" is the prime suspect (unverified).

July 22, 1971: 10:00 p.m. Joyce LePage (21) disappears on the way to her apartment near Stevens Hall at Washington State University, Pullman.

September 1971: Works at Seattle Crisis Clinic, Capitol Hill, "an old Victorian house." According to Rule, Ted saved lives while working there (Rule 2006, 25).

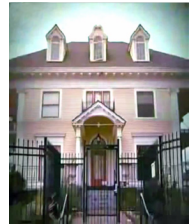
September 3, 1971: Gerard Schaefer is hired by Wilton Manors Police Department.



Joyce LePage (undated). Photo public domain.



Stevens Hall (undated). Photo public domain.



Seattle Crisis Clinic (undated, source unverified). Photo public domain.



Left: Warren Leslie Forrest upon his arrest in October 2, 1974.
Right: Jamie Grissim (undated). Photos public domain.

December 7, 1971: Jamie Rachel (Rochelle) Grissim (16) was last seen walking home from Fort Vancouver High School, Washington State. Lara Starr, Jamie's younger 14-year old sister, recalled the day she last saw her sister alive: "Jamie was outside, waiting for the school bus to come pick her up. She waited

for a few minutes, then came back inside to get warm. We had a brief conversation, and she told me she was going to walk home from school later that afternoon. [...] The walk was four miles, but she felt it would be better than waiting around for a school bus." Investigators allege Grissim is the first victim of serial killer Warren Leslie Forrest.

December 17, 1971: Gerard Schaefer graduates from the police academy at Broward Community College.

December 31, 1971: Ted leaves Pedline Surgical Company.

NOTES

Ted's one-year stint at the University of Puget Sound in 1966 was a doldrum in his life, a no-man's land between the age of 19 and 20. He finished up work at Tacoma City Light shortly before enrolling, and it appears he saved just enough to buy a second-hand car (a 1933 Plymouth coup). Ted continued to live at home during his freshman year, a decision that was most likely part convenience, due to the proximity of his parents' house to the university, and part necessity, since he had no income and his family was not wealthy enough to support him living away. As a way of disguising his poverty, he probably stole text books and clothes, a pattern of behavior that continued from his teenage misdemeanor thefts. The happiest moment of the year came when he sold his Plymouth coup for a '58 Volkswagen beetle, a style of car he would favor for the rest of his life.

Without a steady income, Ted could not afford to get involved in fraternity or sorority activities. The most often quoted phrase for this period of his life is that he "had a longing for a beautiful coed [but] didn't have the skill or social acumen to cope with it" (PIR 1975). Ted's self-description, truthful as it is, conceals the deeper psychic hunger he had for love and affection. Concurrent with finishing up work at Tacoma City Light, he also wound up nightwork as a campaign volunteer for the House of Representative. Ted would later comment that politicking gave him access to hitherto inaccessible stratas of society. It also offered something else, an environment where social interactions were structured, where he could hone a repertoire of behavior that enabled him to construct what psychiatrist Hervey M. Cleckley termed "the mask of sanity" (Cleckley 1941).

Behind the facade, he continued to consume pornography and detective magazines, his primary respite from loneliness. This changed somewhat when he moved away from home at the end of 1966 and transferred to the University of Washington. Around this time he met and fell in love with Diane Edwards. The 1967 Summer of Love had arrived. But Ted didn't dress like a love child or behave like one. It seems he also didn't listen to contemporary pop music either, but preferred classical (Kendall 1981, 19). His relationship with Diane did not last. She found him immature and a liar. Ted's first attempt at constructing a mask had failed. He decided to go on a soul searching trip in the hope that the change of environment would hand him a new perspective on life. He ended up in his birthtown of Burlington where he obtained an abstract of his birth certificate and learned for sure that he was illegitimate (Rule: ref). Defeated, he returned to the west coast and worked his way through a string of menial jobs. Aged 22, with two failed years behind him, he immersed himself ever more deeply in his rape fantasies.

In September 1968 he worked briefly as a driver for Art Fletcher during Fletcher's campaign for lieutenant governor of Washington State. By his own account, Ted lost his virginity around this time to an older woman while totally inebriated. Fletcher's campaign subsequently failed and Ted lost his job, so he decided to return to the east coast again, this time enrolling for a semester at Temple University, Pennsylvania. He began frequenting the flesh spots of New York. It was sometime around late February 1969 in Ocean City, New Jersey, according to his own

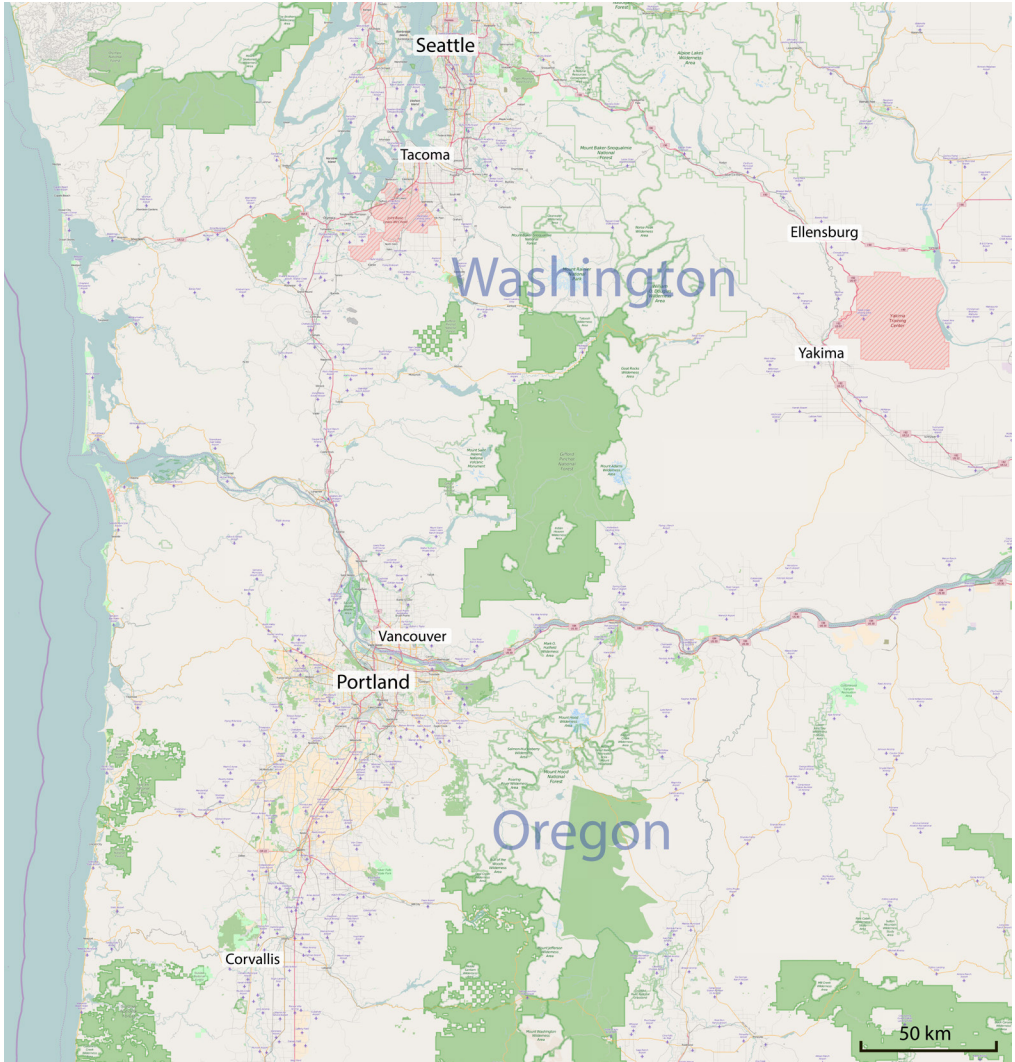
testimony, that he attempted his first rape. Even though it was unsuccessful, he felt he had finally reached the point of no return. From now on, he would pursue the double life with total commitment.

Feeling the east coast wasn't conducive for the kinds of acts he intended, and with the summer approaching, Ted returned to Seattle and moved into an apartment near the University of Washington. He continued to support himself through menial jobs. Meanwhile, throughout the remainder of 1969, he proactively escalated his predatory experimentation. It was around this time that he discovered instrumentation afforded him the best chance of success (that is, the use of a club or some physical item to over-power the victim). Then, at the end of 1969, he met Elizabeth Kloepfer, a young divorcee and single mother of a young daughter. Thus began a relationship that continued, off-and-on, for the next seven years. It was the type of relationship that he could exploit: a woman with low self-esteem and a young child with whom he could role-play a father figure. He would repeat this pattern with at least two other women during his life.

Liz encouraged Ted's dream of becoming a lawyer. However, because Ted had not yet completed his undergraduate degree, he needed to go back to university. This time he enrolled in psychology at the University of Washington (at the start of 1971), a decision that appears to be driven by his need to understand himself, and also, in retrospect, to improve his mask of sanity. Psychology appears to be the one subject that he excelled at. Many of his teachers heaped praise on him. Little did anyone know that Ted was about to embark on his first murders.

References

- Cleckley, H. M. (1941). *The Mask of Sanity: An Attempt to Clarify Some Issues About the So-Called Psychopathic Personality*. St. Louis: MO: Mosby.
- Hall, D. M. (1975). Presentence Investigation Report. The State of Utah Adult Probation and Parole: SLC.
- Kendall, E. (1981). *The Phantom Prince: My Life with Ted Bundy*. Seattle, WA: Madrona Publishers.
- Montane, Diana; Kelly, Kathy (2011). *I Would Find a Girl Walking*. N.Y.: Penguin.
- Tanay, E. (2010). *American Legal Injustice: Behind the Scenes with an Expert Witness*. Plymouth, U.K.: Jason Aronson, Inc.



Map showing the known extent and range that Ted traversed in search of victims once he started hunting on the western seaboard: Seattle in the north, Corvallis in the south, Ellensburg in the east. Map courtesy OpenStreetMap contributors 2016.

Epilogue

Bundy: Well, you gentleman knew that you're getting involved
 with a pretty strange creature ...

Leon County Jail, February 20, 1978. 12:47 a.m. FSA.

“... even after twenty or thirty [...] it's the same thing, because you're the *last* one there” (M&A 1983, 317).

Now that our story has come to an end, what can we say? Do we know Ted any better? Maybe. We've debunked some myths. But we haven't yet synthesized all the data. The goal of this chapter is to do just that.

Introduction: Ted's evolution

| Year | Age | Behavior | Moral boundary crossed |
|------|-------|---|--------------------------|
| 1950 | 3-4 | Exposure to pornography | Lying |
| 1959 | 12-13 | Deviant autoerotic activity | Theft |
| 1961 | 14-16 | Rape fantasies start | |
| 1964 | 17-19 | Voyeurism starts | Psychological rape |
| 1968 | 21 | Switches to being the actor in his rape fantasies | |
| 1969 | 22 | First attempted rape | Assault (rape) |
| 1970 | 23 | Meets Liz Kloepper | |
| 1971 | 24.5 | Progresses to instrumental rape | Assault (battery & rape) |
| 1972 | 25 | Attempts first home invasion rape | |
| 1972 | 25.5 | Possible first murder due to loss of control | Murder |
| 1973 | 26.5 | Decision to actively start killing | Mutilation |
| 1974 | 27 + | Necrophilic behavior emerges | Necrophilia |

Readers who suspect Ted of earlier murders will be disappointed by this trajectory. However, it is time to put unsubstantiated claims aside. One of the more serious problems for proponents of Ted-the-teenage-murderer is aligning that behavior with his adult trajectory. The reality is, a person does not wake up one day and suddenly kill, not unless something extraordinary happens to them that pushes them to do so, and in Ted's case, the evidence for this is simply lacking. The path to

murder is typically sign-posted with clear evolutionary steps. Moreover, once the killing starts, it is extremely rare for it to stop. Some killers have indeed cooled off for lengthy periods between murders, but these periods are *not* without behaviors that are allied to killing in some way, such as continued fantasy activity and lesser crimes such as theft and rape.

The model we propose is that Ted progressed along each part of the trajectory in small steps, each one building on the next. So for example, he first tried rape before he tried abduction. Abduction itself has several steps, where the first attempts were non-instrumental, which rapidly progressed to becoming instrumental (i.e., use of a weapon to render the victim compliant, e.g., knife, crowbar, wooden club etc). The level of violence during each rape then escalated until eventually he committed his first murder. This may have occurred as early as June 1972, citing the Kerry May Hardy case. We cannot say with any certainty that Ted murdered Hardy, but she fits many of the parameters. She disappeared from an area in Seattle that Ted had frequented at one time or another. She was found in Suncadia, about 45 minutes west of Ellensburg along the I-90 axis. Interestingly, she was clothed when found buried in a shallow grave. One explanation for this is that Ted panicked and buried her in a hurry. If true, this reflects the generally accepted observation that a premeditative killer's first murder is a nervy affair, one which demands a steep learning curve. Shock and remorse are likely to be highest at this point of the trajectory compared to later killings. So too awe. To Aynsworth Ted said: "And when he's fifteen, I mean, it'd be a much more mystical, exciting, intense, overwhelming experience ... than when he's fifty" (M&A 2000, 186). Those who want to believe Ted did Ann Marie Burr use this quote as an indirect reference to her, however in the context of the conversation Ted was talking about hunting and he was clearly referring to the typical age that parents usually allow their children to first hunt game using a rifle (i.e., teens). The fact is, Ted was an extremely organized killer. Teenage murderers are without exception generally disorganized and suffer from significant emotional problems, including anger and delusion. Ted's personality type was first and foremost centered around secrecy. He was intelligent and organized enough to know that if he made a mistake any possibility of him continuing on his trajectory would be terminated. It is for this reason that he approached killing methodically in step-wise fashion. He knew that to succeed, he needed transport, knowledge how to role play, and a private apartment. He had none of these things when Ann Marie disappeared.

Still, proponents will argue that Ted could have abducted Ann Marie as a special one-off case. For example, the typical romanticized scenario is he might have just wanted to interfere with her sexually but she struggled and he accidentally killed her. If true, then at this early stage he would have almost certainly made some mistakes. Panic would have played an important role in the post-crime cover up. He might have even sustained some injuries such as scratch marks. But there were no reports of any disturbance or otherwise out-of-the-ordinary behavior in Ted at this time that could be construed as circumstantial evidence linking him to Ann Marie's disappearance. On the contrary. The perpetrator left almost no evidence behind. It looks much more like the perpetrator knew the victim, and for all that has been

written, at age 14 Ted lived far enough away not to be familiar with the Burrs. Take your local suburb. It is hard enough to keep track of one's immediate neighbors, let alone the whole block. Any other connections that have been reported have more to do with wish-fulfilment than reality. A final illustrative point is the issue of coincidence. What are the odds that an infamous serial killer happened to live only a few miles from the location of an unsolved abduction when he was a teen? Very low some would argue. In fact, it is not unusual at all. Ann Marie Burr is not the only person to disappear near where Ted lived. Heidi Peterson disappeared from Capitol Hill, a suburb that Ted frequented, on February 21, 1974. Ted had already killed by this time, but no one ever talks about Ted and Heidi. It could be argued this is because she was too young (aged 4). But do we really know that? A case could be mounted because all the dates of Ted's activities align with her disappearance and discovery a year later, including her skull, which appeared to have suffered trauma. But no, we will not speculate about Ted and Heidi.

Ted's M.O.

Based on what we know, it appears Ted divided up his abductions and murders into discrete stages, each one involving its own set of tasks. The first stage was the planning. Ted only spontaneously abducted about 5 of his 30 or so victims. It all began when he became obsessed with a certain individual. He stalked them to learn where they lived and what their habits were. He gathered the paraphernalia for the ruse that he would employ to abduct them. He identified the abduction location, a separate rape & murder location and oftentimes, an additional separate body disposal location, and lastly, a strategy for disposal of crime scene evidence. All of this took a lot of time and work.

He sometimes performed dry runs at the abduction location to gain confidence in his ruse. This might include entering the victim's house or apartment while they were away to set it up in advance. As a rule, he generally chose a rape and murder location that was as close to the scene of abduction as possible to limit the amount of time that he had to transport a live victim and satisfy his urges, which by the time he obtained the victim would usually have reached fever pitch. These locations would invariably possess several key attributes, such as a looped side road (powerline roads were his favorite), a crossing of some sort (railway line, small bridge), trees or shrub cover, proximity to water if possible, isolation from random passersby, and proximity to a major highway for ease of access. If he could not find a spot that met all these criteria, he would bind and gag the victim during the rape to prevent noise.

Based on what we know, Ted generally raped then murdered his victims in a combined phase before transporting them to a separate body disposal site. Sometimes the rape and murder site also served as the body disposal site, but this was the exception, not the rule. At some point between these two sites, Ted separated all clothing and other items of identification from the victim. If he did leave an item/s with the victim, it would usually be a piece of jewelry and a pantyhose ligature. We do not know why he did this, but it plausibly served two purposes: crime

scene staging for the purpose of satisfying a fantasy; later identification of the victim after other signs of the victim had decayed.

In some cases, victims were never found. Ted said that in these cases it was because he buried the victim, or because animal predation had done his work for him.

Pornography

Ted supposedly was exposed to pornography at a young age. Early exposure, as discussed in the introduction, will have reset his threshold to explicit material, making him more likely to accept extreme images of female subjugation as time went on. Detective magazines, with their racy covers depicting rape and blood lust would have only added fuel to the fire.

Voyeurism

Masturbation to macabre and sexually deviant material could only take him so far; eventually Ted wanted to experience it in the flesh. It was at this point that he decided to sneak around and peer into windows. It was not like he had not done this before. As a pre-teen, he had almost certainly prowled around his neighborhood. But now he specifically wanted to hide beneath a window and peer at the naked female form. Voyeurism is rightly regarded as a gateway to acting out, because like all addictions, the individual wants to see more, do more. The first successful clandestine observation of a partially naked female is a thrill, but that scenario eventually loses its excitement value. No one knows, but it has been estimated that about one-half to two-thirds of voyeurs go on to rape. Voyeurism is also associated with other paraphilias. In Ted's case, socks was one of his confessed fetishes, but because of his detective magazine exposure he would have also gone on to develop some macabre fetishes as well. The period when Ted transitioned from voyeurism to sexual assault was without doubt the most nervy period of his life, however, there are no police records of Ted having ever been charged with sexual assault, even though police suspect he was involved in a number of cases. The closest Ted ever came to being spotted as a voyeur was in September 1972, by Liz's best friend, Mary Chino.

Rape

Having the sex addiction that he had, it was inevitable that Ted's voyeurism would lead to rape. By his own admission, his rape fantasies began during early adolescence (e.g., the sun-baking female in the woods). Of course, his fantasies at this time were still immature; he would have lacked knowledge of the mechanics of rape at that age. It is interesting that his rape fantasies switched from passive to active around the age of 22, and coincides with when he said he lost his virginity to an older woman while inebriated. Shortly after this he said he attempted his first rape (in New Jersey). That attempt failed and he retreated back to Washington.

Not long after that he embarked on a systematic trajectory towards achieving his goal of obtaining a female so that he could do what he wanted to her and get away with it.

Nowadays rape is defined as penetration (oral, vaginal, anal) against the victim's will. It is a sub-category of the more general "sexual assault." Since Ted also battered many of his victims, he also engaged in sexual assault "with battery." Rape statistics are incredibly hard to define, but it is generally accepted that about 80% of all rapes are by acquaintances. The remainder are usually defined as "stranger rape." Nicholas Groth has proposed three subtypes of rapist: anger, power and sadistic (Groth & Birnbaum, 1979). The Massachusetts Treatment Center (MTC) proposes four subtypes: opportunistic, pervasively angry, sexual gratification and vindictive. According to the MTC typology, the sexual gratification subtype is comprised of men who have extensive sexual fantasies, are preoccupied with them, many of which they incorporate into the rape act itself. They may or may not be sadistic. The non-sadistic type can be further differentiated according to their level of social competency (Knight, 1999). Ted draws some striking resonances with the MTC sexual gratification subtype. Approximately 15% of Ted's rapes were of the acquaintance type; the remaining 85% were stranger type. About 25% of Ted's abductions were non-violent in nature, the remainder involved battery, and in two known cases, he used a knife.

As he came up behind her, she heard him. She turned around and he brandished a knife and grabbed her by the arm and told her to do what he wanted her to do. You know, to follow him (M&A 1980, 133).

This encounter echoes similar reports such as the following from the Australian Institute of Family Studies:

I was coming home from the pub near my place. It was late in the evening, I was walking home and listening to music. I live in, like, a really safe neighborhood. I was walking down my street, and I do it all the time. No one was following me ... then, all of a sudden, I just felt this weight on my shoulders. It was a guy, and he was grabbing me from behind. He then took a blade and held it to my throat. He dragged me into the park next to where I was walking and then he came and stood in front of me. He said, "I'm going to rape you and kill you." He made a fist and he started hitting me on the left side of my face.

Thus it would appear that Ted was just your regular garden variety violent rapist, but the following passage reveals he was a lot more than that:

What should he do with her? He'd have to debate a considerable amount. There had been an illegal act of rape. Yet he refrained from harming her physically and left the scene and returned to his car and drove home. Had it occurred a few weeks later, he wouldn't have acted in the same way. Or a few days later. But he did not want to create a great amount of public furor because it would reduce the opportunity for victims later on and it would increase the possibility of eyewitness reports. And he knew enough about these circumstances that, in all likelihood, it wouldn't be re-

ported. Or if it was reported, nothing much would be done about it. They wouldn't necessarily link it to the other crimes. It would have been a simple act of rape of the type that is fairly common (M&A 2000, 144).

Ted studied criminal law. He had access to police rape reports sometime between October 1972 and March 1973. So he knew the terrain. This enabled him to come to the conclusion that there are "types" of rapes, some of which are fairly common (so he had a sense of statistics, something he would have learned studying psychology). He also had a sense of the *zeitgeist*. He knew that the vast majority of rapes went unreported. He then reveals his more sinister motive, Ted the Fisherman, making sure he doesn't fish out his pond. It reveals his long-range planning. He went out of his way to make sure he didn't kick up a "furor." Beneath the hood of this dark engine his use of language shows us that he has a good concept of morality. He knew that what he did was wrong, but he is emotionally disconnected from it. Like when he says: "... he refrained from harming her physically," he minimizes the physical and psychological suffering he inflicted on the victim, paints a portrait of himself as a gentleman rapist, if that term could be used. The truth, unfortunately, is more prosaic. As a life-long rapist, Ted inevitably grew more violent over time. Thus, while he may not have started out as a sadistic rapist, by the time he finished his career, he had thoroughly turned into one. Note, this is in contrast to someone like Gerard Schaefer, who started out as a sadistic rapist from day one.

If we were to delve a little into his "style," then we could compile the following list of behaviors extracted from things he said about himself or were reported of him by others: he preferred his victims to undress in front on him (to satisfy his voyeuristic tendencies); he called women "bitches" when intoxicated with alcohol; he once joked publicly to a victim that he was going to rape her (suggesting that he probably verbalized his intentions to other victims once he had them in his control); he issued threats of bodily harm if the victim didn't comply with his requests; he bound and gagged victims if he was forced to rape them close to public areas; at least two of his girlfriends reported that he choked them during sex, he was not averse to raping victims that he had severely injured, or were close to death or had just died.

Assault

It appears Ted initially employed assault as an operational method to obtain victim compliance. Later on, this appears to have evolved into hurting women for sexual gratification in-and-of-itself. As he explained to Michaud and Aynesworth, he started out with voyeurism, but over time was driven to "active" stimulation and started shifting from "psychological rape" as Hagmaier defined it, to active rape. His first attempts at securing a victim involved tampering with victims' cars – removing the rotor device out of their motors' distributors or deflating their tires (M&A 1980, 110). For various reasons these efforts failed. He needed a more reliable approach. This led to his first experiments with instrumental assault (use of clubs, knives). It seems that from these first clumsy experiments he learned

that the best approach was to attack the victim ninja-style; either from behind unawares, or while they slept in their beds. Invariably the bashings were so severe that those who experienced them usually ended up with life-threatening penetration wounds to the skull and brain.

During rape, control of the victim is paramount to the rapist, and Ted was no exception. Thus, in those cases where the victim was sufficiently under his psychological control, he had them undress in front of him so that he could satisfy his voyeuristic tendencies, or if they resisted, he handcuffed them or bound them with rope or strips of material. In about half of all his cases, he rendered the victim semi-comatose during the abduction. This allowed him to perform his devious acts on the victim without resistance. These acts included sodomy and foreign object insertion into vaginal and/or anal orifices. In the other half, he employed a ruse to lure the victim to a location where he could gain control over them, oftentimes handcuffing them before they had time to react. Once the victim was restrained, they had little choice but to comply with his demands.

Murder

No one knows why Ted was driven to murder, nor when he first murdered. However, there are enough clues to paint a reasonable picture. According to Hagmaier, Ted's first murder came as a result of displaced aggression. Displaced aggression occurs when someone builds up frustration over an incident in one encounter and releases it on a secondary target in separate encounter. The classic case is kicking the dog at home after an argument with the boss at work. All it takes is for the dog to do one small wrong thing and that serves as a trigger for the release of the pent-up frustration and anger. As much as we would like to agree with Hagmaier on this assessment, we find Hagmaier's claim to be something of a smoke screen. It may be true that Ted lost control during the rape and the situation then escalated to murder, however, the fact that Ted went on to commit multiple murders suggests a deeper undercurrent of motivation behind his behavior than a simple case of displaced aggression would have us believe, even for the first murder.

We know Ted was fascinated with death from a relatively young age. We also know that thoughts of murder generally develop in serial killers around adolescence. This is when the brain undergoes massive upheaval due to hormonal processes, when the body crosses the threshold into adulthood. It would be fair to say that the first simmerings of sexual desire that arose in Ted's brain were not your average thoughts on the matter. He had already primed his brain with multitudinous images gleaned from pornos and detective magazines by this time, so these would have colored those first sexual stirrings with deviant and macabre themes. At first, they may have merely arisen as a set of kinky ideas about sex and death. But for reasons that we still do not know, they became more and more oriented towards violent sex and death, eventually reaching the status of obsession. The apparent similarity of this process with the development of addiction in individuals has made the *addiction theory of serial murder* one of the most plausible theories that explains their behavior. On the surface, indeed, there is nothing to distinguish

Ted's addiction to murder from any other addiction, whether it be alcohol, gambling or sex-addiction.

At the core of Ted's addiction, of course, is the pervading fantasy process. Fantasy is so central to sexual murder that it could be argued that Ted was primarily addicted to the fantasy process *itself*. The problem with the fantasy theory of serial sexual murder, however, is that it fails to explain the cold hard reality of murder and its aftermath. Increasing addiction to fantasy by its very nature is supposed to distance the individual from reality. Arguably, murder, more than any other activity, is the quintessential cold-hard reality, and could not be further (phenomenologically at least) from inward turning fantasy. Or is it? How can we redress this contradiction? One way that fantasy theorists have attempted to patch over this problem is argue that the killer attempts to perfect his fantasy with each murder, but because murders are anything but perfect, the killer is left dissatisfied and eventually starts planning the next murder in order to achieve that perfection, learning from his mistakes as he goes. Evidence for fantasy addiction in Ted comes from the things he said about the aftermath of a murder, that it was like coming out of a bad dream, a night sweat and so forth. He would have us believe that during the commission of the murder he was in some sort of altered state and only afterwards did he snap out of it and see the reality of what he had done. Unfortunately, Ted himself busted that theory: "Yeah, I try to get away with split personality" (Pensacola bug tape, February 18, 2:15 a.m., FSA). The day before his execution, he made it very clear to Lewis that he did not have split personalities, or multiple personality disorder: "... the malignant portion of my personality or consciousness, call it what you will—the entity—is more or less directing the mood and the action, I'm still on another level conscious of this, I'm not totally unconscious of, or unaware of it (Nelson 1994, 287). Indeed, to Hagmaier, Ted said he just "liked to kill." From this we can conclude that we have to be careful when arguing that Ted killed because he was addicted to fantasy, that killing served the function of maintaining the fantasy.

Despite this, it cannot be denied that fantasy plays a key role in the evolution of a serial killer. Here it may help us to operationalize our definition, since all healthy normal individuals engage in fantasy on a daily basis (and much more frequently and unconsciously too, if neuroscience is correct). Obviously fantasy is not hallucination. But what is its relationship to ordinary cognitive activity, such as day dreaming, active imagination (visualization in the mind's eye to solve problems, inventing things), forgetting a train of thought (because we were interrupted by a reverie or flashback), eidetic imagery, or illusions to name some of the phenomena that could fall under the heading of fantasy activity? It would appear that when we use the word "fantasy" in relation to serial killers, we are specifically talking about violent sexual fantasies, their frequency, intensity, and most important of all, the crossing of the threshold between purely thinking them and acting them out.

Perhaps Ted came closest when he gave us the phrase "as if seen through a motion picture screen" (M&A 1980, 124). The acting out of a fantasy appears to be a kind of superimposition phenomenon whereby the individual projects visual forms onto an external object through active imagination. In the very simplest of

analogies, seeing a female in a detective magazine wearing a particularly revealing blouse, then projecting that image onto a victim during an abduction even though she may not be wearing the same blouse. Ted may have even taken it so far as to bring clothes and props he had seen in magazines and made his victims wear them, to turn them more closely into the images he had seen and rehearsed in his mind.

What makes acting out so difficult to nail down is that it is *not* an all-or-nothing process. There are many small gradations. It can start with something as simple as fixating on the hair of a sibling. It can progress to scaring a girlfriend by jumping out at her from behind a bush. The next step might be to pick up a piece of two-by-four and carry it with the intention of striking someone, but not actually do it. The perpetrator could rationalize their behavior by arguing that there is no differences between them and a builder carrying a piece of wood out of a hardware. Except the perpetrator knows that the context has determined their act to be criminal. They have crossed a threshold not necessarily in behavior, but in *intent*. At the same time, the physical act of carrying the wood has allowed them to become habituated to that behavior. It is not unlike a child using training wheels on a bicycle. There will come a time when the wheels are no longer needed, but in the interim some important skills have to be learned. When it is time for the training wheels to come off, it is like a ratchet falling into place. It is not that this cannot be reversed due to a physical barrier (the wheels could be put back on) but because a psychological threshold has been crossed (the exhilaration of riding without wheels has ample attractive value in itself to make going back to riding with training wheels undesirable). Thus, when the first murder finally takes place, it springs forth from the culmination of these small steps, not some singular act of displaced aggression. This paints a picture of a wilful individual who has resolved to behave in a certain way. It does not answer the question why Ted chose to kill. Whether he hated women, loved them, was obsessed by them, or wanted to possess them, or most likely, needed to cover up his rapes ... or all of the above, we shall forever speculate and this is one of the reasons why these individuals are so fascinating (even as we detest their behavior).

Necrophilia

Ted was a self-confessed necrophile. There are claims, however, that Ted engaged in necrophilia with bodies that had undergone significant putrefaction. It is difficult to find a direct quote by him in the archives saying he did that. Nevertheless, it is reasonable to assume that if he did return to a body that had decayed, we cannot rule out some sort of non-contact auto-erotic behavior. This is apart from removing the aforementioned heads. This kind of close contact with a partially skeletonized body would involve a degree of habituation to putrefaction odors that would repel ordinary people. When he said he buried Cunningham after leaving her on the surface, that meant digging a hole and putting her in it, which implies man-handling a decayed cadaver.

The other contentious issue is whether Ted specifically murdered in order to obtain a dead body for the purposes of post-mortem sexual molestation. Once

Bill: I am not sure how many, but you opted to sever the heads from the victims and, how many was that do you recall of thirty?

Bundy: Oh, that's

Bill: I realize it's a difficult question because you are a different person now than you were then. But to search back and

Bundy: Oh perhaps half a dozen.

Bill: So approximately twelve of the thirty had their heads severed. Were there any other body parts severed?

Bundy: Again, it was extremely rare and it was not, it was not I know with some people I have heard it is their kind of signature but it was not something like that for me, but in those occasions when it occurred it was almost, outside of those couple of occasions, I was sort of frenzied, lashing out, it was more of an attempt to transport, conceal, uh, their remains more than anything else.

Interview excerpt altered to fit format. Note Hagmaier exaggerates the number of decaptiations. Date of interview: January 22, 1989.

again, this is unconfirmed. He did make the comment to Lewis that he sometimes lamented that he killed his victims too quickly and would have liked to have spent more time with them while they were alive, suggesting that his primary motive for necrophilia was not an end-in-itself, but an opportunity he took advantage of after having gone through all that trouble of getting a victim in the first place. Thus, we cannot say he could only ever achieve orgasm with a dead individual, as he had normal sexual relations with women who generally reported mostly normal sexual contact with him. We also cannot assume he had an aversion to being gazed upon intimately by the victim during the sex act, as in the case of the suspected Seattle rape victim where he taped over her eyes. It would appear that he taped over her eyes so that he could remove his ski mask while he raped her and not be identified. This would allow him to use his mouth, as has been observed in the Chi Omega case. Thus, concealment, appears to be his primary motive.

Mutilation

There appears to be as many fantasies about Ted that Ted had himself when it comes to what he did with his victims after he murdered them. Ted admitted that he used a hacksaw to decapitate about "half a dozen" of his victims' heads and transport them to another location (to obfuscate crime scene evidence). Since he knew the importance of fingerprints, we could argue that he must have therefore also amputated hands and transported them to separate location as well (note: no hand or finger bones have ever been recovered from Issaquah or Taylor Mountain).

Ted's admission that he cut up victims is somewhat constrained by his embarrassment about this aspect of his behavior. Obviously post-mortem dismemberment and decapitation serves the purpose of crime scene obfuscation, but inves-

tigators would like to believe Ted derived some sort of macabre satisfaction out of these acts as well, not to mention having oral sex with decapitated heads. The truth is we don't know that. Ted alludes to "frenzied" states where he lashed out at some victims because he was particularly intoxicated with alcohol at the time and had built up a lot of anger and frustration in the weeks preceding the murder. It is impossible to say whether this kind of lashing out was targeted at that particular victim, or whether that victim had simply been in the wrong place at the wrong time.

The fact that Ted severed heads and transported them prompted Keppel to ask him whether he ever kept body parts in the refrigerator. Ted denied getting into that sort of behavior. In fact, when you look at the Issaquah and Taylor Mountain crime scenes, evidence of post-mortem mutilation is extremely vague. Hawkins' head was never found, despite extensive digging at Issaquah. Ott & Naslund appeared to have been disarticulated more by animal than human activity. The skulls at Taylor Mountain without exception were missing all their vertebrae which led one medical examiner to conclude that they must have been *pulled from already skeletonized remains elsewhere*, and as for the remaining found victims, Smith, Aime, Campbell, Bowman, Levy and Leach, they were all intact, with only Leach perhaps showing signs of post-mortem mutilation, but because of decomposition it could not be conclusively determined one way or the other. The one case where Ted gave away some detail about post-mortem activity was Cunnigham, and he described her as intact except she had mummified by the time he returned to her.

Thus, the post-mortem mutilation scenarios that have been ascribed to Ted appear to be tenuous at best. The evidence, if anything, points more towards Ted leaving bodies whole above ground for animal predators in some cases, and in others, complete burial. If he did return to the bodies at a later date, it would appear that he only did this for the above-ground cases, and only then to remove body parts (such as heads) once they had already undergone significant skeletonization, the purpose of which was to further obfuscate crime scene evidence. It doesn't rule out multiple visits to some bodies, but the frequency of these would be low. We could estimate an average number of visits post-mortem, but that rule would only apply to some victims, not others.

Mythbusting

According to Hagmaier:

Serial killers used to get ideas from detective magazines, which we called "the serial killer's Bible." As you may recall, on the cover of almost every detective magazine, there would be an adult male in a menacing stance over a female who looked terrified but still sexy, with part of her breast or leg exposed. There was a chemistry of sex and violence together—pleasure and power—which appealed to certain marginal members of our society. When Ted Bundy killed his victims, he was basically reenacting the covers of detective magazines. (Something that is still not generally known about Ted Bundy is that some of his victims were found wearing nail polish that wasn't theirs or with their hair styled or dyed differently than was their habit, because he had kept them sometimes for days, not alive but dead. He was into

necrophilia, as a number of serial murderers have been.) So killers such as Bundy got ideas from the fiction on the covers of detective magazines; today's criminals watch television and movies (Hagmaier, 1997).

Well, not even Hagmaier is immune to distorting facts. None of Ted's victims had their hair dyed a different color; unless that fact was treated as special information which was withheld and only given to police; no mention of it is made in the available coroner's reports. The two victims that have been associated with post-mortem activity of this type are Smith and Aime, and no mention of hair dye is made in official reports that can be found in the archives. Hagmaier's claim that Ted kept live victims for days is also unsupported. In the first edition of this book we argued the same, however, careful examination of the timeline and all the available evidence leads us to believe that it is extremely unlikely that Ted kept live victims longer than he had to.

However, from Hagmaier, we also learn that:

... after a while, murder isn't just a crime of lust or violence. It becomes possession. They are part of you. After a while, when you plan these, that person becomes a part of you and you are forever one [with them]. [...] even after twenty or thirty that it's the same thing, because you're the last one there. You feel the last bit of breath leaving their body. You're looking into their eyes and basically, a person in that situation is God! You then possess them and they shall forever be part of you. And the grounds where you kill them or leave them become sacred to you, and you will always be drawn back to them (M&A 1983, 317).

We trust Hagmaier paraphrased Ted to a reasonable degree of accuracy. Here Ted talks about possession and the mystical aspects of murder. The line, "You're looking into their eyes ..." goes back to how Ted must have become a reasonably good observer of vital signs: pulse, pupil dilation, breathing, any physical movement of the body, post-mortem twitching, etc. We know that in a handful of cases he did not spend much time with the body, but mostly he had plenty of time after killing the victim to linger over them. It didn't always happen after the midnight hours, but that was the general pattern. To check some of the vital signs required light. He had the option to use his car headlights, or a flashlight. The reference to "God" and the "sacred" raises obvious connotations with religion, however, as we shall discover, it has drawn some strange attractants.

The following paraphrased quote is supposedly Ted talking to a victim and is posted by Daniel Mann on his blogspot under the title 'Ted Bundy and Atheism.' The quote is a complete fabrication; Ted never said anything of the sort, but here it is anyway:

Then I learned that all moral judgments are "value judgments," that all value judgments are subjective, and that none can be proved to be either "right" or "wrong." I even read somewhere that the Chief justice of the United States had written that the American Constitution expressed nothing more than collective value judgments. Believe it or not, I figured out for myself what apparently the Chief Justice couldn't figure out for himself: that if the rationality of one value judgment was zero, mul-

tipling it by millions would not make it one whit more rational. Nor is there any “reason” to obey the law for anyone, like myself, who has the boldness and daring—the strength of character—to throw off its shackles. I discovered that to become truly free, truly unfettered, I had to become truly uninhibited. And I quickly discovered that the greatest obstacle to my freedom, the greatest block and limitation to it, consists in the insupportable “value judgment” that I was bound to respect the rights of others. I asked myself, who were these “others”? Other human beings, with human rights? Why is it more wrong to kill a human animal than any other animal, a pig or a sheep or a steer? Is your life more to you than a hog’s life to a hog? Why should I be willing to sacrifice my pleasure more for the one than for the other? Surely, you would not, in this age of scientific enlightenment, declare that God or nature has marked some pleasures as “moral” or “good” and others as “immoral” or “bad”? In any case, let me assure you, my dear young lady, that there is absolutely no comparison between the pleasure I might take in eating ham and the pleasure I anticipate in raping and murdering you. That is the honest conclusion to which my education has led me after the most conscientious examination of my spontaneous and uninhibited self (*Christian Research Journal*, Vol 33, No 2, 2010).

To track down where the original quote came from, we turn to the *Christian Research Journal* and to the article authored by Chad Meister (pp. 23-35). Meister writes:

A statement by Ted Bundy, paraphrased and rewritten by Harry V. Jaffa, Homosexuality and the National Law (Claremont Institute of the Study of Statesmanship and Political Philosophy, 1990, pp. 3–4).

So we go to Jaffa’s book, which is available at Amazon.com and read one of the reviews of his book:

“... he provides an imagined conversation between serial killer Ted Bundy and one of his victims. Though professional philosophers do occasionally like to dramatize their arguments, or even present them in fictionalized form, Jaffa’s evocation of Bundy is ill-advised” (David Walters, March 29, 2012).

A polite way of saying it was stupid to try and put words in Ted’s mouth when you don’t know what you’re talking about. The funny part is that there are numerous instances of people blogging on the web that refer to this fictional quote, many of which are aligned to religion, showing that religion and Ted do not mix. Philosophers have also been caught out as well. Louis P. Pojman & James Fieser have a book out in 6th edition where they continue to peddle this quote as true even when they reference Jaffa’s article. The book is on ethics, so go figure the ethics of representing fabrication as fact!

In another example you have Pamela Lillian Valemont who has written a numerological analysis on Ted. The book is 104 pages in length and the list price is USD\$74.00. It’s enough to make you scratch your head. Obviously there is an entire Freak Show out there dedicated to creating myths about the man. For example, the following person claims to be Ted’s great-grandnephew (going by the name of

Michelle Cowell; see Creepypasta reference). Putting aside the obvious clanger (or are we to assume intersex?), we find this person claiming to have found a chest about the size of a shoe box in her grandmother's attic containing a "letter, a small mirror, and what appeared to be a sapphire amulet." The letter reads (in part):

Dear Samantha,

[...] One night I was walking home from a play, and as I walked I came across a necklace and a mirror, and a note, all banded together. My curiosity made me take these items home. When I did I found that the note said if I put the necklace on and wished for something in front of the small mirror, it would come true. [...] I put the necklace on and wished for the ability to have any girl I wanted. Immediately the mirror glowed a bright green and I swore I saw some eyes in the mirror too. I felt a jolt go through my body. Next thing I knew I woke up in my bed like normal. I went and did everything I would do on a normal day, but when I was walking outside every girl would look at me with lust. Surprised I decided I would try something. Later that day I visited a woman I had the hots for, and I asked if she would like to go on a date, to my surprise she said yes! But after the date when we left the club I blacked out. The next day I woke up and she was laying next to me in bed, but when I looked at her she was beaten bad. Her jaw was shattered, she was bleeding everywhere, most of her bones were broken, some poked out of her skin, skin was torn off, it was horrifying. I jumped out of the bed and vomited. Something kept me from calling the police. I left her body there; I was so shaken up but for some reason I continued to do my daily activities. I seduced a woman into letting me stay at her house, but when I woke she was dead too; even worse this time. It was horrible. I ran home and wished into the mirror for people to stop dying, This time the mirror glowed red, blood red. The eyes came back except this time they spoke. "You have made your wish Theodore. And nothing is going to stop your thirst for blood. Good Luck, I will help you evade the police until your 30th murder, in which case you're on your own." Then he faded away with a deafening evil laugh. Do you see now?? It wasn't me. I did research and this demon's name is [the words here were smeared with what appeared to be blood]. I mailed you the necklace and mirror a couple months ago; destroy them, and if you can't, bury them in the middle of a forest or woods. You must get rid of these demonic items. Good bye Sam. I am sorry.

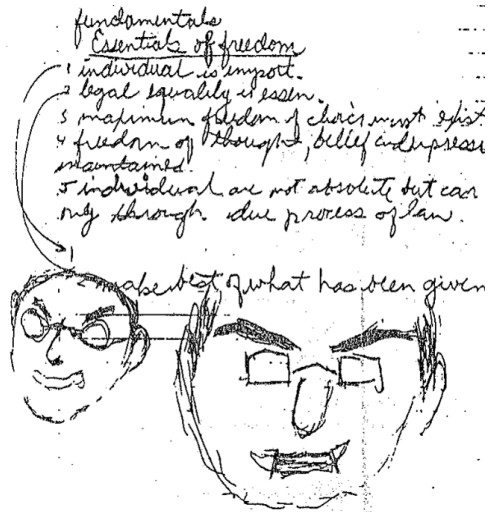
Uncle Ted

We're not going to explore the provenance of this piffle, but we have to treat it with some seriousness, because it brings back the claim by the unknown source who quoted Ted saying he was possessed by a "Beast." We brushed the religious connotations of that aside at the time, but here we shall explore it a little further for sake of fulfilling the breadth and depth of our research brief.

Demonic possession is as old as the hills, however modern neuroscience places it firmly in the domain of mental illness. Epilepsy, specifically petit mal seizures, are considered the most likely explanation. Either that or trance drugs. However, Ted's EEG showed no trace of epileptic-type patterns, so it would appear we can rule out "possession" in the orthodox sense. This didn't stop Lewis from hypothesizing the possibility of altered states. She was exceptionally driven to find evidence

of petit mal-type phenomena in Ted:

I reviewed [...] some papers that Mr. Bundy had written [...] around the time that he was in college [...] and there is a drawing that he did and there is an interesting kind of metamorphosis in the drawing and also in the writing on the page. [...] When I asked Mr. Bundy about it, first of all, he said, “Did I do this?” He said this is my writing, which I think is quite interesting because certain individuals when they are in an altered state or whatever write differently from the way they do at other times. And here is a picture where, first of all, there is a head, a person of some sort, and then the head enlarges and the head has teeth like Dracula. And there also seems to be a change in the writing right within the page itself. It looks as if he became less organized or whatever on the page. [...] When I showed this to Mr. Bundy, his first reaction was did I do it, that he didn’t remember it, and then he said “Was I on drugs.” I don’t know, but this was at college and as far as we know he was not into drugs. And this seems to be sort of a visual representation of perhaps what happens with him when he goes into these states (Lewis testimony. December 15, 1987, pp 227-8).



Ted’s college drawing of a vampire with writing about the “fundamental essentials of freedom.” Photo source: *The Miami Herald*, December 11, 1986.

What are we to make of this analysis given the drawing in front of us? We recall he supposedly referred to himself as a “vampire” during the Pensacola interviews. The context of the quote is that he stayed up during the night and slept during the day. There is no explicit reference to the more macabre connotations of vampirism.

The implicit assumption is that vampirism denotes a physical metamorphosis. We know Ted has been associated with such changes on a number of occasions. Stephen Michaud remembers his experience vividly:

Early on when we started talking in the third person [...] I remember, at one point I finally got him to talk about one of the murders we both knew he was involved with [...] he grabbed the tape recorder and started talking, [...] under his right eye I saw this white line start to develop, [...] it was like a lash mark, [...] it had nothing to do with the character or the contour of his face, [...] like a scar, and it stood out, and it got really [...] distinctive as he was talking about what he did to the girl, what he did to her afterwards, [...] and then he finally stopped and he looked up at me, it was the first time our eyes had actually locked together in fifteen minutes, and he was exhausted, he was sweating (Michaud 2015).

Joe Aloï as we recall witnessed the change. He described it as an odor, like an animal or a wet rug (*Tallahassee Magazine*, March - April 2010). Then we have

Virginia Bristol's account from around 1968 (presumably when Ted first returned to the east after breaking up with Diane Edwards). In that version she said that after a very pleasant evening at a concert as they waited in a train station Ted suddenly started to ramble, he made no sense and he looked crazy, and she felt that he was not in touch with her (Lewis testimony. December 15, 1987, p. 225). Finally we have Liz's accounts. For example, the time he pushed her into the icy waters of the Yakima River (July 6, 1974). In that instance, when she surfaced and their eyes locked, she said his "face had gone blank, as though he was not there at all. I had a sense that he wasn't seeing me" (Kendall 1981, 52). Liz's father, Russell Hirst, an M.D., stated that if he was going to give an opinion of the individual, "[Ted] was definitely a schizophrenic." When asked to elaborate on that, he stated that "at one time he is very nice, very pleasant, very helpful; then he becomes extremely moody, does not talk, gives you the opinion that he is really thinking or contemplating something" (Jerry Thompson report. Russel N. Hirst interview, September 9, 1975).

These reports are too numerous and consistent to dismiss as figments of people's imaginations. It seems that during these episodes Ted momentarily fell under the spell of the "Beast." Neurologically, we posit a PFC decompensation event caused by ego-depletion. This leads to a gating malfunction, where the dark and sinister contents of his fantasy-world spill into his conscious stream and take it over. In the words of Schaefer: the "ghoul" has come out. The original Arabic *gūl* (derived from the late 18th century) describes a person who robs graves to prey on corpses. From what we know, Ted was not a grave robber—at least there are no reports of him robbing graveyards for corpses—but he did create his own graveyards from the corpses of young females he abducted and murdered. The witnesses' descriptions of weird facial transformations, of foul odor, strongly suggest that during these episodes Ted's necrophilic fantasies may have become engaged. And even though he may not have verbalized these thoughts, they may have leaked out in his behavior and people have an uncanny sense when it comes to these kinds of things. They sense that something out of the ordinary is happening, and it triggers an unconscious reaction. We cannot say with absolute certainty that Ted stunk, or had a lash mark across his face; people may have projected these things into him out of their own fearful imaginations, even though they are not without foundation (i.e., they may be exaggerations of real things).

Neuroscientifically, much more work still needs to be done to elucidate the neural signatures that comprise ghoulish experiences. It is not a case of entertaining ghosts and spirit worlds. Rather, a more mundane explanation can be found in out-of-body experiences (OBE) and "shadow" phenomena. The temporo-parietal junction (TPJ) has been identified as a key brain area that subserves these phenomena. Katherine Ramsland has tentatively put forward the suggestion that Ted's sense of an "other" within himself may have stemmed from a TPJ problem (2013). Research has shown that the TPJ is important for binding ongoing sensory experience with sense-of-self (Blanke & Arzy, 2005). If there is asynchrony between the sense-of-self and incoming spatial and temporal data, this can result in the experience of phantom projections such as OBEs, doppelgangers, or other weird bodily

states. Often, the cause of TPJ asynchrony is epilepsy, but it can also come about as a result of drugs or brain trauma (e.g., a stroke or head injury). Ted, as we know presented a “slightly” abnormal EEG profile suggestive of depressive-like neural patterns. We do not know if more extensive tests would have uncovered evidence of an epileptic disorder. It may be that his use of cannabis and alcohol exacerbated a vulnerability. Cannabis in particular has been associated with trance-like states and may have triggered an abnormal neural firing pattern in Ted’s brain that caused more of the deviant thought patterns to emerge – not necessarily taking over his personality, but changing his mood.

Sadism

BUNDY: I know that what it comes to that _____ there
is something wrong with me ^{do I feel a bit dead (that)} I can't go any further _____

Voice: Why? You can to Ted.

BUNDY: I'm as cold as a mother fuckin __ ever that you've ever
put your fucking eyes on. _____ I don't give a shit
about those people.

CHAPMAN: So!

BUNDY: I do _____

CHAPMAN: Tell us about it, Ted.

BUNDY: It's just so strong ^{it's me} ~~and meaningless~~

The context of this statement as was reported in newspapers was that police were exhorting Ted to tell them where he left Kim Leach’s body. In fact, the context is the Carol DaRonch case, and police were losing their grip on Ted and were desperately trying to get him to open up, but Ted had already abdicated (First night Tallahassee, 12:47 a.m. February 20, 1978, p. 53).

As commented on earlier, Ted may not have started out as a sadist, but he almost certainly became one by the time he killed his last victim. In his final interview with Lewis the day before his execution, Ted was contradictory about his sadistic behavior. On the one hand, he admitted that his “need, the thought, the feeling, the excitement of harming, of getting some sort of sexual gratification at harming someone, was absolutely paramount” (Nelson 1994, 293). Then, about a minute later, he says, “there were many times the girls were conscious, but—and I’m quite serious about this—I never got off, never was aroused or excited in any way by the women being scared” (Nelson 1994, 294). What are we to make of this? It would appear he is making a distinction between getting sexual gratification out of physically harming someone and getting off on the fear response of his victims. The most generous interpretation we could make of this is that while they were conscious he liked to role play his ruse right up until the moment he harmed them physically. The victim might be terrified at being raped, but they would be of the belief that once they got through that they would be free. Moments later, Ted would strangle them to death. At least this accords with what he told Nelson on a different occasion when describing one of the hitchhikers he killed:

He drove across the state line to a secluded place in the woods that he was already familiar with. He led the girl out of the car, assuring her that no harm would come to her. He made her strip and kneel on her hands and knees while he took Polaroid pictures of her. [...] She cried. He could see the look of terror in her eyes, her eyes begging for mercy. He kept reassuring her. He didn't like to see their hurt, he said, he didn't like to see his victim as a person – he wasn't the kind of person who would harm another. [...] ... not the kind of person who would hurt a fly. [...] Then he got behind her, slung a noose around her neck, and strangled her as he raped her. He'd continued to reassure her he would let her go, and she seemed to believe him. He said he felt a little sad that he could not let her go, that he had to kill her, but she would be able to identify him, of course (Nelson 1994, 258-9).

There are so many clues in this passage, the use of a secluded area, the demands that the victim pose for his pleasure, the terror in the victim's eyes, the maintaining of the surface validity of the encounter, then the noose, which seems to conveniently materialize from a pocket ready-to-hand, and the insistence that he was a rapist only, even as he strangles his victim to death, as if he needed to keep that part of his behavior hidden away from the victim so as not to sully the image of himself as the gentleman rapist. Apart from the callous premeditated plan to kill the victim, there appears to be no evidence that he did get off on seeing the terror in the victim's eyes. This of course clashes with the statement he gave to Hagmaier, that he would look into the victims' eyes as the life drained from their bodies. Perhaps that statement of Ted is Hagmaier's interpretation. Because Hagmaier also reported that Ted liked to strangle his victims from behind – which has a stronger ring of plausibility about it:

1. it allows the killer to bring out a noose without the victim's awareness
2. it is easier to strangle a victim from behind as they cannot defend themselves as well from that position
3. it allows the killer to maintain the surface validity of the encounter in their eyes; the victim does not see the rapist transform into the killer
4. it allows the rapist to perform the sex act anonymously, while keeping the victim depersonalized

Brent E. Turvey in his examination of Ted found a lack of evidence supporting claims that Ted was a sexual sadist (Turvey 2011, 469-70). He found three instances of authors conflating the evidence:

- “Ted Bundy, in addition to being a serial killer, must be viewed a serial sadistic rapist” (Holmes 1991, 81).
-
- “Far from being the Rudolph Valentino of the serial killer world, Ted Bundy was a brutal, sadistic, perverted man” (Ressler and Schachtman 1992, 63).
-
- “Clinically speaking, Ted Bundy was a sexual psychopath who enjoyed killing women in the context of expressing his sadistic sexual fantasies” (Geberth 1996,

798).

We also find psychiatrist Robert Simon latching onto the bandwagon:

With his arm in a cast, he would get them into his car, or to some isolated spot, and then bludgeon them with a short crowbar concealed in the removable arm cast. While the women were unconscious or semiconscious, he would then commit gross sexual acts, including anal assault. Bundy bit various body parts, sometimes biting off a victim's nipple or leaving bite marks on her buttocks. He killed the victims by strangulation. Bundy mutilated and decapitated their bodies, and severed their hands with a hacksaw. He would leave the bodies in secluded spots and return to them after several days to commit necrophilic acts such as ejaculating into the mouth of a disembodied head (Simon 1996, 259)

Passages such as these reveal more about the author's own fantasies than anything authentic written about Ted. Nowhere in the forensic literature on Ted does it say he secreted a crowbar in his arm cast, or that he cut victims' hands off with a hacksaw, or that he routinely mutilated them, or that he ejaculated into the mouths of disembodied heads. Ted may have actually done much worse things than these acts, but the reality is *we don't know*. It seems that most authors cannot help themselves; they simply cannot limit themselves to the evidence. They have to inject their own tepid imaginations into Ted.

If we do limit ourselves to the evidence, then the most authentic iteration possible is that Ted was first-and-foremost a rapist concerned with concealing his identity, and to this end he worked very hard to remove any and all evidence that connected him to his crimes. Was he a sadistic rapist? It would appear from the evidence that it was not his primary motive. That the victims were terrified is unquestionable, but did Ted specifically engineer that terror, ratchet it up to the maximum degree possible to get the gratification he desired? That part of the story is open to interpretation. In this book, we have used Gerard Schaefer as a comparison to put Ted into context. When we examine Schaefer's crimes, and his writings, what we find is a man whose fantasies specifically revolve around sadistic torture. He was also far more deviant than Ted:

He wasn't familiar with the basic chemistry of human putrefaction. I'd been a hunter, so I know how to prevent spoilage of meat in the field. I'd listen to him whine about how a girl would turn rotten on him so fast, then I'd clue him in on how to keep her fresh as long as possible. I told him to string the girl up by the ankles and cut off her head to exsanguinate her. Blood rots fast, and so do brains. So it's best to cut off the head and drain the blood. He wanted to know what I'd do with the head, and I said I'd put it on a stick so she could watch me make love to her body. He'd almost come in his shorts listening to this stuff (Schaefer 1997, 228)

And ...

He added the practice of killing and mutilating livestock according to his doctor. Not only did he kill and behead them, he had intercourse with them. The strange part

of his “confession” about the killings of livestock was he told the doctor he had not remembered it before when he had talked to other doctors, but he had an epiphany with this particular one. There were reports in the town of Davie 15 miles west of Ft. Lauderdale of livestock being killed, beheaded and human seamen left on them. It is highly probable that Schaefer was indeed telling the truth. When the doctor asked Schaefer why he remembered this incident at this point, Schaefer told him he was crazy. He told the doctor he was not normal and that he badly needed help for his hostility (Mason 2011, 700-1).

Obviously, we would not associate Ted with this kind of depravity. Schaefer seems to be pretty much the bottom of the barrel. Ted by comparison *was* a Boy Scout.

Conclusion

| | |
|----|---|
| 16 | A. I'M NOW TRYING TO SUMMARIZE ABOUT TEN OR FIFTEEN YEARS |
| 17 | OF WORK. |
| 18 | WHAT IT HAS SHOWN, AND THIS IS, NOT ONLY WHEN WE |
| 19 | COMPARED MORE VIOLENT INDIVIDUALS AND MORE VIOLENT OFFENDERS |
| 20 | WITH LESS VIOLENT OFFENDERS, BUT ALSO WHEN WE HAVE COMPARED |
| 21 | LET'S SAY INCARCERATED DELINQUENTS WITH ORDINARY |
| 22 | NON-DELINQUENTS, WHAT YOU FIND IS THAT WHEN YOU HAVE A |
| 23 | <u>COMBINATION OF "SOME KIND OF INTRINSIC VULNERABILITY," BE IT</u> |
| 24 | <u>BECAUSE OF A NEUROLOGICAL KIND OF DISORDER OR BECAUSE OF A</u> |
| 25 | <u>PREDISPOSITION TO A PSYCHOTIC DISORDER SUCH AS SCHIZOPHRENIA</u> |
| 1 | <u>OR MANIC DEPRESSIVE ILLNESS, AND WHEN YOU COUPLE THAT WITH</u> |
| 2 | <u>AN UPBRINGING IN A HOUSEHOLD THAT IS VIOLENT, YOU OFTEN</u> |
| 3 | <u>CREATE AN INCREDIBLY VIOLENT INDIVIDUAL.</u> |

Evidentiary hearing, Dorothy Lewis court transcript, December 15, 1987, case # 86-968-CIV-ORL-18.

In the preface to this book we accepted the proposition that an inherited vulnerability and family modelling played a significant role in Ted’s etiology, but we said it wasn’t sufficient. We have argued that the vulnerability was his prefrontal cortical deficit and that this directly impacted Ted’s management of ego-depletion. It is probable that, like Jerome Brudos, Ted became fixated on a fetish object early in life (e.g., socks). How this came about is not clear, but there is plenty of scope for speculation, ranging from super-stimulus imprinting (Aronsson, 2011) to trauma (Freud & Strachey, 1975). Ted’s sock fetish foreshadowed his later sexual deviancy, and likely involves a compulsive component. The compulsive component is probably directly linked to his PFC-deficit, much the same way that Asperger’s syndrome and other autistic spectrum disorders involves compulsive (and obsessive) behav-

ior (Bejerot, 2007; Haskins & Silva 2006; Kristiansson & Sörman, 2008; Reaven & Hepburn, 2003). While none of this explains Ted's motivation to seek out sex and violence, it lay the ground work for the association between sex and violence. One way this could have happened was through compulsive masturbation. If Ted was masturbating repeatedly to images of violent sex and death, then this would have reinforced the association between pleasure and those images. Repetition strengthens the neural circuitry that underpins the behavior, in effect creating a positive feedback loop, much the same way that drug addiction is formed. Compulsive masturbation also causes distress and feelings of social inadequacy, which compounds the problem, making the individual prefer to withdraw into loneliness where they feel less out of control. However, this only leads to insularity and a decline towards deviant thinking. By the time Ted became a young adult and added cannabis and alcohol to his routine, the stage was set for the killer to emerge through the twin forces of fantasy elaboration and prefrontal cortical disinhibition. Here, his "voices" played a causative role by amplifying his deviant thinking. The impact of this was to make him more susceptible to empathy failure. The process began when his ego depleted in the face of social and cognitive challenges (which in turn was potentiated by his PFC deficit). When this happened, his go-to response was to turn to the thing that gave him the most comfort: masturbation to sexually violent material. Later, as he became habituated to this activity, he engaged in voyeurism to achieve the same arousal levels that solo masturbation provided. Voyeurism in turn led to acting out. Once that happened, there was no going back. The first murder opened a whole new world of possibilities, the most deviant of which was necrophilia and mutilation. Make no mistake, Ted tried to "de-escalate" his actions, however, given that he had a fixed PFC deficit and a categorical unwillingness to seek help for his "sickness" (because of a fear of being permanently institutionalized), he eventually chose to become a Macbeth-like figure:

I am in blood
 Stepped in so far that, should I wade no more,
 Returning were as tedious as go o'er.
 (Act 3, Scene 4, p. 7.)

Ironically, after his final capture in Florida in 1978, when he knew that the likes of Theodore Robert Bundy should never be allowed on the streets again, he asked to be institutionalized in a Washington facility close to family and friends. The only problem—and he knew it—was that it would never work in practise. He would try to escape again, just like he tried to escape from Raiford maximum security. There is no permanent cure for addictive behavior, only eternal vigilance.

References

- Aronsson, H. (2011). *On Sexual Imprinting in Humans*. Stockholm University.
 Australian Institute of Family Studies (2010). Insights into sexual assault perpetration. Giving voice to victim/survivors' knowledge. Research Report No. 18 – December 2010. <https://aifs.gov.au/publications/>

- insights-sexual-assault-perpetration/chapter-3-victim-survivor-narratives (accessed August 14, 2016).
- Bejerot, S. (2007). An autistic dimension: A proposed subtype of obsessive-compulsive disorder. *Autism*, 11(2), pp. 101-10.
- Blanke, O. & Arzy, S. (2005). The out-of-body experience: Disturbed self-processing at the temporo-parietal junction. *Neuroscientist*, 11(1), pp. 16-24.
- Freud, S. & Strachey, J. (1975). *Three Essays on the Theory of Sexuality*: Basic Books.
- Geberth, V. J. (2013). *Practical Homicide Investigation: Checklist and Field Guide* (4th ed.). Boca Raton, FL: CRC Press.
- Groth, A. N. & Birnbaum, H. J. (1979). *Men Who Rape: The Psychology of the Offender*. New York: New York: Plenum.
- Hagmaier, W. (1997). Combatting child abduction and serial killers. *International Society of Barristers Quarterly*, 32(4), pp. 435-41.
- Haskins, B. G. & Silva, J. A. (2006). Asperger's disorder and criminal behavior: forensic-psychiatric considerations. *Journal of the American Academy of Psychiatry and the Law Online*, 34(3), pp. 374-84.
- Holmes, R. (1991) *Sex Crimes*. Sage Publications: London, England.
- http://creepypasta.wikia.com/wiki/Ted_Bundy%27s_Letter (accessed February 8, 2016).
- Knight, R. A. (1999). Validation of a typology for rapists. *Journal of interpersonal violence*, 14(3), pp. 303-30.
- Kristiansson, M. & Sörman, K. (2008). Autism spectrum disorders: legal and forensic psychiatric aspects and reflections. *Clinical Neuropsychiatry: Journal of Treatment Evaluation*, 5(1), pp. 55-61.
- Mann, D. (2010) Ted Bundy and atheism. <http://mannsword.blogspot.com.au/2010/07/ted-bundy-and-atheism.html>, July 8, 2010 (Accessed April 2, 2016).
- Mason, Y. (2011). *Silent Scream*: Lulu.
- Meister, C. (2010). Atheists and the quest for objective morality. *Christian Research Journal*, 33(2), pp. 28-35, October 26, 2015.
- Michaud, S. (2015). *100 hours behind bars with Ted Bundy*. <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=gSAnIp4C-6c> (Published on Oct 26, 2015; accessed December 21, 2015).
- Nelson, P. (1994). *Defending the Devil*. New York: William Morrow and Company, Inc.
- Pojman, L. & Fieser, J. (2011). *Cengage Advantage Books: Ethics: Discovering Right and Wrong* (6th ed.): Cengage Learning.
- Reaven, J. & Hepburn, S. (2003). Cognitive-behavioral treatment of Obsessive-Compulsive Disorder in a child with Asperger Syndrome: A case report. *Autism*, 7(2), pp. 145-64.
- Ramsland, K. (2013) Bundy's demon: Part I. Several killers have described a driving force they could not control. <https://www.psychologytoday.com/blog/shadow-boxing/201309/bundys-demon-part-i>. Posted September 01, 2013 (Accessed March 2, 2015).
- Ramsland, K. (2013) Bundy's demon: Part II. Several killers have described a driving force they could not control. <https://www.psychologytoday.com/blog/shadow-boxing/201309/bundys-demon-part-i>. Posted September 04, 2013 (Accessed March 2, 2015).
- Ressler, R., Schachtman, T., (1992). *Whoever Fights Monsters*. St. Martin's Press: New York, NY.
- Schaefer, G. J. (1997). *Killer Fiction* (Susan London Ed.): Feral House.
- Simon, R. I. (2008). *Bad Men Do What Good Men Dream: A Forensic Psychiatrist Illuminates the Darker Side of Human Behavior* (Updated ed.). Arlington, VA: American Psychiatric Publishing, Inc.
- Turvey, B. E. (2011). *Criminal Profiling: An Introduction to Behavioral Evidence Analysis* (4th ed.). Oxford, UK: Academic Press.
- Valemont, P. L. (2013) *Numerology Serial Killer Ted Bundy*. Lulu (1st edition).

Index

Residences

42nd Street 76, 77
364 Douglas Street 248, 254
413 "B" Street 254
565 First Avenue 159, 184, 216, 219, 242,
245, 391, 392
bathroom 226
Booth, Carol 207, 213, 235
cellar 225
Dunn, James 226, 253, 254, 264
fire escape 220
Lish, Dan 159
Maughan, Marguerite Christine 162, 194,
234, 247
Shearer, Charles A. 208, 223, 253
4143 12th Avenue N.E. 77, 384, 385
ladder 101

A

Africano, J. Victor 285, 343
Aime case
Aime, James J. 332
Aime, Laura Ann 167, 172, 174, 188, 189,
191, 218, 229, 230, 231, 262, 264,
332, 334, 397
American Fork 172, 173
American Fork Canyon 188
Beverige, Marin 172, 175
Bowers, Jerry 174
Brown's Café 173, 174
Bullock, Brent 174, 259
Bullock, Steven 172
Fairview 175
Flaming Gorge 175, 229
Heber City 175, 188
Jack & Jill Lanes bowling alley 172
Jones, Thomas 172
Knotty Pine 172
Lehi 172
Orem 172
Park City 175
pig study 230, 395

Robinson Park 172, 230
Smith, Dick 172, 174
Timpanogos Cave Visitor's Center 188,
189, 230, 332, 396
Wootton, Noall 174
Aldrin, Buzz 82
Aloi, Joe 306, 311, 312, 315, 361
Andrews, Tommie Lee 332
Arkansas
Fayetteville 74
Armstrong, Neil 82
Attorney Messenger and Process Service
82, 84
Austin, Van O. 257, 261
Aynesworth, Hugh 317, 319

B

Baillin, Jim 155
Baird, Nancy 217, 334
Ballantyne, Ron 244, 253
Ball case
Ball, Brenda Carol 130, 138, 198, 218,
306
Ball's skull 197
Brubeck's Topless Bar 131
Flame Tavern 130, 146
Highline Community College 130
sling 130
Barrick, Diane 138
Barton, Thomas 204, 214, 336, 339
Beach Boys 191
Beal, Ira 96, 244, 245, 250, 329
Beaumont, Richard 87
Becksted, Garth 329
Bernado, John 242
Bickers, Angela 330
Blakey, Milton K. 259
Bodiford, Steven 285, 303, 305, 306, 314
Boise hitchhiker 155, 159, 160
Boone, Carole Ann 208, 261, 263, 267, 306,
313, 316-319, 323, 325, 329, 330,
332-334, 341, 343
Boone, James 316, 333, 336

- Boone, Rosa 323, 325, 329, 332
- Boy Scouts 49, 50, 151
- brain & behavior
- amygdala 15, 16, 28, 33
 - anterior insula 34, 35
 - antisocial behavior 16
 - association areas 16
- Attention Deficit Hyperactivity Disorder (ADHD) 16
- autistic spectrum disorders 16
- basal ganglia 16, 66
- bipolar disorder 17, 18
- cingulate cortex 15, 16, 66
- compartmentalization 22, 311
- developmental disorder 16, 17, 18, 19, 29
- differential myelination 19
- displaced aggression 26, 29
- dorsal anterior cingulate 28
- echolalia 314
- ego-depletion 17, 18, 26, 344, 362
- electroencephalography (EEG) 21, 329, 360, 363
- empathy 14, 16, 30, 31, 35, 43, 44, 150, 151
- endogenous depression 329
- epilepsy 360
- petit mal seizures 360
- gating 22, 25, 27, 344
- hippocampus 15, 16
- incentive sensitization theory 28
- inner speech 20, 344
- major histocompatibility complex 19
- Multiple Personality Disorder (MPD) 23, 24
- narcissism 343, 345
- Obsessive Compulsive Disorder (OCD) 21
- out-of-body experiences (OBE) 362
- panic attack 136, 166, 251, 330, 331
- parietal cortex 16
- passive aggressive 25
- prefrontal cortex (PFC) 16, 18-20, 22, 25, 27, 29, 33, 43, 63, 64, 66
- decompensation 17, 26, 362
- premotor cortex 16
- psychopathy 14
- regression 17
- reward circuit 28
- schizophrenia 16, 18, 43, 44, 65
- supplementary motor area 16
- synaptic pruning 19
- temporal cortex 16
- temporo-parietal junction (TPJ) 362
- thought insertion 21, 22, 344
- ventral striatum 28
- Brigham Young University 188, 192
- Bristol, Virginia 18, 47, 48, 342, 362
- Browne, John Henry 37, 304, 314
- Brownsville, Pensacola 298
- Brudos case
- Brudos, Jerome Henry 46, 75, 341
 - Brumley, Liane 78
 - Long Tom River 78
 - Salee, Linda Dawn 78, 82
 - Slawson, Linda Kay 74
 - Sloper, Judge Val 82
 - Smith, Gloria Jean 78
 - Sprinker, Karen 77, 82
 - Vikko, Stephanie 76, 77
 - Whitney, Jan 76, 82
 - Willamette River 75, 82
 - Wood, Sharon 78
- Bryant, Paula Tully 339
- Bullat, Jerry 52
- Bundy, Glen 162, 255
- Bundy, Glenn 49
- Bundy, Johnnie Culpepper 46, 48, 267
- Bundy, Linda 49, 54, 255
- Bundy, Louise 54, 74, 254, 316, 332, 337, 340, 342
- Bundy M.O. 23, 104, 114, 117, 130, 135, 138, 148, 174, 199, 218, 225, 267, 281, 319
- briefcase 154, 199, 317, 339
- Buck General hunting knife 310
- bushes 19, 96, 248, 274, 278
- cabin 150
- cast 73, 80, 139, 153
- cleaning 107, 115, 117, 214, 255
- crowbar 199-201, 265, 266
- crutches 36, 126, 138, 154, 171, 199, 201,

- 246
 girls being tied up and bound 246
 handcuffs 36, 104, 135, 137, 200, 241, 245, 264, 265, 267
 Gerocal A. brand. *See* DaRonch case
 Jana brand 241
 handgun. *See* DaRonch case
 hardware 99
 hatchet 126, 153
 knife. *See* Wilcox case: knife
 ladder 165
 ligature 281, 283
 manual strangulation 94
 oriental knife 103, 118, 234
 pantyhose 138, 241, 276, 280, 281, 319
 pantyhose mask 265, 267, 282, 283
 plaster of Paris 246
 Polaroids 37, 159, 203, 243
 rape 24, 66, 89, 90, 98, 105, 106, 114, 117, 140, 149, 173, 174, 200, 201, 252, 266, 327, 328, 346
 rapist 23, 332, 339
 secrecy 36, 54
 surprise attack 23
 taped lug wrench 247
 tracked 319
 Bundy, Richard 59
 Bundy, Sandra 51
 Burlington 47, 74, 87
 Burr, Ann Marie 59, 340
- C**
- California 27, 42, 142
 Marin County 84
 Riverside 142
 Sacramento 85
 Santa Rosa 84, 85
 Camera 100
 Campbell case
 Bartholomew, Carol 194
 Bartholomew, Wynn 193
 Campbell, Caryn Eileen 192, 193, 195, 196, 230, 245, 253, 254, 258, 259, 261, 265, 292, 327, 334, 338, 400
 Campbell, Robert 338
 Gadowski, Raymond 192
 Glenwood Springs 400
 hair 196
 hyoid bone 196
 Owl Creek Road 195
 Owl Creek Road 400
Playboy magazine 192
 Sinclair Divide 195
 Snowmass 192, 265, 400
Viva magazine 192
 Wildwood Inn 193, 195, 243
 Carignan, Harvey Louis 60
 Carlisle, Al 62, 70, 72, 76, 256, 262
 Chapman, Norman 303-306
 Chinese 24, 69, 71, 73
 Chino, Mary Lynn 83, 96, 152, 154, 236, 247
 Chi Omega case 117, 151, 305, 314, 319, 320, 324, 325, 326, 328-330, 332
 431/A Dunwoody Street 273, 278-280, 282, 291, 298
 Anifowoshe Yommy ("Segun"), Christopher 276, 282
 Baptist campus ministry (FSU) 271
 Black, Carla 274
 Bowman, Margaret 272-277, 281-283, 313, 316, 319
 Chandler, Karen Ann 275, 277, 278, 281
 Ciccarella, Deborah Ann 278, 282
 Corwin, Scott 274
 Cossin, Diane 276
 Crew, Ray 276
 Denton, Susan 276
 Dickey, Roy 291
 Dowdy, Nancy 274, 275, 316
 Dozier, Wilton 282
 Eng, Ronnie 316
 Fulford, Robert 292
 Gage, Rusty 278
 Gauldin, David 324
 Gunter, William P. 270, 293, 304, 314
 Hastings, Connie 273
 Hasty, Daniel G. 305
 Henson, Mary Lynn 315

- Hodges, Mark 275
 Hopkins, Tina 270, 274
 Ihlefeld, Mark 273
 Johnson, Doug 272
 Keith Daws 291
 Kellog, Chris 273
 Kleiner, Katherine 275-278, 281, 337
 Kratky, Kathy 271
 Lasko, Patricia 316
 Levine, Lowell 313
 Levy, Lisa Janet 273, 275, 276, 280, 281,
 313, 314, 319
 Lowder, Greg 274
 Mathews, William 278
 McGill, Jackie 275
 Melanie, Nelson 273
 Messier, Frances 283, 290, 292
 Misner, Kenneth Raymond 270, 303
 Murphy, Terri 273
 Neary, Nita 260, 275-277, 307, 316, 319
 Nelson, Melanie 274
 Newkirk, Henry 274, 276
 Nudi, Cana Jean 273
 "Oaks" apartments 269, 274, 278, 280,
 283, 290-293, 298, 304, 305
 O'Brien, Debbie 273
 Parklane Hosiery 280
 Payne, Jerry 282
 Picano, Mary Ann 273
 Polombo, Henry 278
 Pottinger, Jack 92, 307
 Rafferty, Cheryl 274
 Ragan, Randal 271, 284, 292
 Reynolds Hall (FSU) 271, 274, 280
 Rush, Michael 273
 Sherrod's 272-274, 280, 281, 284
 Sorrell, Orley 278
 Souviron, Richard 311, 313, 314, 316
 Stone, Valerie 274
 Thomas, Cheryl 271-273, 278, 280, 291,
 319
 Trice, Thomas M. 273
 Waddell, Leslie 274
 Weeks, Kim 282, 283, 319
 Winkler, Howard 283
 Young, Nancy 278, 282
 Cleckley, Hervey M. 14, 89, 315
 Coleman, Jim 23, 312, 325, 333, 336
 Colorado
 Aspen 74, 115, 169, 192, 199, 203, 208,
 218, 234, 238, 251, 253, 254, 259,
 261, 264
 Berthoud Falls 244
 DeBeque Canyon 139
 Dillon 203, 254
 Frisco 199
 Glenwood Springs 148, 192, 200, 260,
 263, 305
 Garfield County Jail 259, 260, 263, 305
 Golden 199, 204, 207, 216, 314
 Grand Junction 139, 254
 Colorado River 206
 Green River 139
 Rifle 208
 Silverthorne 199
 Vail 263
 Condit, Eileen 85
 Connecticut
 New Haven 332
 Cooley, Melanie Suzanne 207, 208
 Cosden case
 Baker, Brenda Joy 129, 138
 Cosden Jr., William E. 47, 129
 Devine, Katherine Merry 106, 234
 McKenny Park 106
 Millersylvania State Park 138
 Couch, Dennis 96, 163, 187, 246, 329, 334
 Covach, Karen 95
 Cowart, Judge Edward Douglas 315, 332
 Cowell, Edna 74, 95
 Cowell, Eleanor 48
 Cowell, John "Jack" R. 48, 74
 Cowell, Louise. *See* Bundy, Louise
 Cowell, Sam 234
 Cowell, Samuel F. 18, 48, 76, 324
 Crenshaw, Raphael 341
 Culver case
 Alameda Junior High School 209
 Al Kuta 213
 Culver, Lynette Dawn 157, 208

Ferry Butte 212
 Hawthorne Middle School 209
 Meeks, Chuck 211
 Reneau, Russell 208
 Snake River 208, 211
 Turner house 209
 Cunningham case
 Cunningham, Julie 199, 203, 207, 245, 254
 Hogback Ridge Trail 202
 Lindvall, Matt 199, 200
 Rifle 200
 Sun Valley 203
 Vail 199
 Curran, Rita 87
 Curtis case
 Bountiful Orchard Youth Conference 214
 Brigham Young University 214
 Curtis, Barbara 214
 Curtis, Susan 214
 Green River (City) 215
 Helaman Halls 214
 Lemmon, Arnold 214
 Price 214, 215
 Prine, Pat 216
 Wilkinson Center 214
 Curtis, Susan 336

D

Dali, Salvador 335
 Dam, Paul Van 207, 213, 235
 DaRonch case
 Canaday, Laurie Lee 180
 crowbar 182
 DaRonch, Carol 175, 218, 249, 306
 Fashion Place Mall 175, 177, 187, 257, 266
 glovebox handle bar 181
 handcuffs 178, 181
 Gerocal A. brand 176
 handgun 176
 pistol 178
 McMillan Elementary School 178, 398
 Murray Police Department 178, 180, 394

Murray Police sub-station 178
 "Officer Roseland" 175, 237
 Riet, Joel 176, 180
 Walsh, Mr. T. 176, 179
 Davis, Ross 98, 99, 102, 104
 Dean, James 192
Defending the Devil 18, 23, 331
 Denning, Bob 206
 Denver 74, 213, 269
 Capitol Hill 46
 Nederland 207
 Park Hill 47
 DeSalvo, Albert Henry 60
 detective magazines 65, 66, 89, 259
 Front Page Detective 58
 Inside Detective 149
 True Detective 149
 Dobson, James C. 36, 333, 335, 339
 Dodge, Warren 50
 Doyle Archer Funeral Home 336
Dracula 53, 361
 vampire 55, 361
 drugs
 alcohol 17, 26, 27, 178, 186, 275, 279, 285
 Ativan 315
 cannabis 26, 27, 65, 76, 85, 120
 marijuana 249
 pot 163
 Chlorhydrate 315
 intoxicated 24
 Limbital 315
 nicotine 17
 sodium pentothal 109
 Valium 146
 Dugger, Richard 329, 338
 Dunn, Roger 151, 252

E

Edwards, Diane Marjorie Jean 24, 70, 71, 72, 75, 76, 89, 101, 103, 104, 107, 109, 188, 362
 Elizabeth Lund Home for Unwed Mothers 47, 87

Evans, Dan 95, 97, 101

F

Farmer, Kathy 255

Farmer, Millard 303, 313, 343

FBI 35, 253, 261, 290, 327, 331

Department of Justice statistics 327

Neill, Robert 253

Feldman, Marilyn 329

Ferris, Mrs. 72, 73, 139

Fisher, Mike 172, 174, 193, 199, 244, 253,
259, 305, 334, 335

Fletcher, Arthur A. 76, 89

Florida

Atlantic University 85

Boca Del Mar 82

Crestview 294

Daytona Beach 326

Eglin Air Force Base 294

Fort Lauderdale 92, 96, 97

Gainesville 204, 328, 336, 337

Hutchinson Island 99

Jacksonville 284, 285, 310

Live Oak 317

Miami 75, 292, 315, 316, 329

Oakland Park 92

Orlando 317, 318, 330, 332, 338

Florida Department of Law Enforcement
(FDLE) 305, 307

Florida State Prison 23, 339

Florida State University 269

Doak Campbell Stadium 292

Dorman Hall 260

Longmire Building 274

Media Center 271

The Birthplace 323

Forbes, Ben 242

Forbes, Paul 250, 259

Ford Mustang 70

Ford pickup (Ted's) 104

Forrest case

Blake, Krista Kay 141, 217

Countryman, Norma 151

"Daria" 162

Derry, Barbara Ann 92

Forrest, Warren Leslie 48, 88, 141, 162,
168

Grissim, Jamie Rachel (Rochelle) 88, 168

Knutson, Gloria Nadine 129, 312

Morrison, Martha Marie 155, 168

Valenzuela, Carol Platt 154, 168

Foster, Jodie 323, 327

Foster, Larry 69

Fowden, Marian Stauffer 187

Fraser, Scott 94, 250

G

Geiger Elementary school 49, 60

Georgia

Atlanta 269, 303, 329, 330

Geri, Miss 49

Getz, Dale 207

Gibbons, Henry 250

Gibbs, Becky 138

Gibson, Judge Robert 250

Gilmore, Gary 258

Glatman case

Ainsworth, Steve 50

Bridgeford, Shirley Ann 52

Dull, Judy Ann 52

Ebaugh, Franklin G. 48, 49

Glatman, Albert 49

Glatman, Harvey Murray 46-49, 58

Glatman, Ophelia 46

Hand, Eula Jo 46

Howard, Dorothy Gay 50

Lauer, Norene 46

Mercado, Ruth 53

Godbold, John 330

Golden, Curtis 314

Good, Margaret 315, 316

Graham, Bob 325, 328, 329, 343

Grant, Judge Paul 251

Green Plymouth 239

Green River killer case 324, 341, 343

Griggs Lumber Mill 82

Grossman, Barbara 260

Gulf Coast 269, 293

Gwinn, Sandy 93, 95, 234

H

Haggard, Bob 315
 Hagmaier, Bill 66, 218, 228, 331, 333, 334, 335, 336
 Hall, Donald M. 254, 255
 Hanson, Judge Stewart 252, 253
 Harborview Hospital
 Mental Health Center 93, 94, 234, 251
 Hardy, Kerry May 24, 93, 342
 Hare Psychopathy Checklist-Revised 14, 15, 33
 Harper, Robert Augustus 324
 Harvey, Ed 314, 315
 Harvie, David 318
 Hawkins case
 briefcase 132, 134
 cast 134
 Covey, Duane 134
 crowbar 135, 137
 crutches 132, 137
 Greek Row 133
 handcuffs 137
 Hawkins, Edie 337
 Hawkins, Georgeann 120, 132, 137, 140, 151, 154, 172, 337
 Hayward, Bob 237, 239, 242, 245, 266
 Hayward, Pete 192, 242, 250
 Healy case
 Cowell, Edna 110, 115
 Dante's Tavern 110, 140
 Dorman, Wayne 111
 Fonis, Ted 111
 Healy, Lynda Ann 95, 104, 108, 110, 140, 167, 217, 218, 233, 250
 Healy's skull 197
 Heath, Ginger 110, 112, 113, 115
 Northwest Ski Promotions 111
 rug 116
 Sweeney, K. 217
 Skaviem, Karen 110, 112, 115, 217
 Sutherland, Monica 111, 116
 Testa, Joanne 110, 111, 116

Hergesheimer, Randy 'Hergy' 171, 175, 242
 Hillyer, Andrea 335
 Hinckley Jr., John Warnock 323, 326, 327, 328, 331, 332
 Hirst, Russell 171, 245, 246, 362
 Holbrook, Alan 304
 Holiday Inn 192, 199, 209, 210, 211, 263, 275, 285, 294
 Hollar, Vicki Lynn 103
 Holmes, Ronald M. 37, 289, 324, 331
 Holt, Doug 49
 Holt, Sandi 49
 Hunt Junior High 52

I

Idaho
 Boise 42, 156, 157, 160, 213
 Burley 158, 160
 Coeur d'Alene 93
 Nampa 155, 159
 Pocatello 105, 288, 435
 Snake River 155, 158, 160
 Intermountain Crime Conference 191

J

Jackson, J. O. 308
 jimmy tools. *See* Bundy M.O.: crowbar
 Johnson, Frank 330
 Jolly, Rita Lorraine 102
 Jopling, Judge Wallace 313
 Justis, Suzanne Rae 105

K

Katsaris, Ken 306, 313
 Kendall, Liz. *See* Kloepfer, Liz
 Kennedy, John F. 60
 Kent case
 Beal, Ira 186
 Couch, Dennis 219
 Fairview 175, 227
 Farmington Bay 223
 handcuff
 key 186
 Heber City 227

- human patella 175, 340
 Kent, Dean 185, 338
 Kent, Debra Jean 116, 175, 186, 218, 306, 334, 340
 Kent family 322
 Lakes Area 223
 Manti 187
 Mt. Pleasant 175
 Park City 227
 Ricks, Kathryn 183, 184
 Shepherd, Raelynn 183, 221, 244, 249
 Thistle 187
 Tingey, Tami 183, 185, 249
 Viewmont High School 171, 175, 179, 183, 184, 186, 214, 221, 243, 245, 266, 399
 Keppel, Robert D. 29, 37, 93, 99, 116, 134, 149, 151, 155, 182, 196, 198, 200, 250, 251, 281, 306, 324, 325, 333, 340
 Kestenbaum, Joel Mandel 152
 Kienast, Richard "Dick" 261
 King County Office of Law and Justice Planning 97, 98
 Kinghorn, Gerald 244
 King, Martin Luther 75
 Kloepfer, Liz 31, 32, 82, 90, 105, 119, 126, 139, 175, 214, 216, 242, 246, 267, 304, 306, 323, 337, 362
 Greg 101
 suicide 95
 Kloepfer, "Tina" 130, 306
 Knudson, Leslie 254, 267
 Knutson, Josh 213, 235
 Knutson, Leslie 207, 213, 216, 217, 235
 Koran, Isaac 303, 305
 Kutchinsky, Berl 327
 Kuypers, David 318
- L**
- Lake Sammamish case
 Blackburn, Donald E. 337
 cast 142, 144, 145, 148
 Craven, Jacqueline 144
 Galloway, Cindy Lynn 144
 Graham, Janice Ellen 142
 Kelly, Gina Ralph 142
 Lake Sammamish 306
 Little, Ken 146
 Naslund, Denise Marie 146, 147, 148, 151, 160, 333, 341
 Okada, Pamela S. 143
 Ott, Janice Anne 142, 143, 146-148, 150, 151, 160, 337, 341
 Ott, Jim 142
 Plischke, Jacqueline Marie 145
 Sharpe, Theresa Marie 143
 Siebenbaum, Sindi Jae 145
 sling 143, 144, 145
 Snyder, Jerry 143
 Ted's VW 232
 Terrell, Jackie M. 144
 Turner, Patricia Ann 145
 Valint, Sylvia Maria 143
 Veres, Katalin E. 143
 Larsen, Richard W. 75, 79, 204, 310, 311, 328, 341
 Lawrence, Fred 336
 Law School Admission Test (LSAT) 98
 Leach case
 Anderson, Clarence L. 288, 289, 313
 Barrow, Doug 307, 308
 Bonner, Tandy 286, 288
 Buck General hunting knife 285
 Caldwell, Juanita 286
 Chez Pierre 290
 cigarette butts 307
 Dekle Sr., George R. 285, 289, 293, 308, 310, 319, 321
 Edenfield, Clinch 287
 FSU Media Center van 278, 290, 292, 293, 298, 307, 312, 313, 319
 Garzaniti, Ricky 293
 Green Acres Sporting Goods store 285
 Farhat, John 285, 310
 Hampton, Beatrice 293
 Hendricks, Elaine 286
 Henson, Mary Lynn 313, 315, 319
 hog shed 287, 308

Kline, Milton V. 288
 Lake City Junior High School 285, 286
 Lasko, Patricia 316
 Leach, Freda 286, 306, 338
 Leach, Kimberly Diane 208, 285, 287,
 288, 289, 308, 310, 311, 313, 319,
 324, 325, 328, 329, 330, 332, 333,
 340, 343
 Leach, Thomas L. 338, 340
 Lipkovic, Peter 308
 Moore, Jackie 289
 Parmenter, Danny 285
 Parmenter, Leslie Ann 285
 Robinson, Ken 308
 Sconyers, Dale 285
 Shriver, Theresa Connie 293
 Suwannee River State Park 307-310
 Tyre, Elwood 338
 Lee, David 300, 301
 Leon County Courthouse 314
 Leon County Jail 306, 314
 LePage, Joyce 87
 Lewis, Dorothy Otnow 17, 37, 58, 73, 314,
 329, 331, 332, 335
 Lindvall, Matt 335
 Locard's principle 238
 Lohr, Judge George E. 259, 261, 262
 Lubeck, Bruce C. 253, 258, 265, 312
 Lunneborg, Patricia Wells 94, 251
 Lusky, Sam 46
 Lyttle, Elizabeth 313

M

Mackey, Randy 336
 Mackie, Nick 92, 108, 252, 306
 Macmaster, Robert 340
 Manson case
 Evergreen State College 119
 Hidden Springs Drive 120, 387
 Manson, Donna Gail 119, 120, 122, 167,
 196, 218, 340, 387
 Mount Rainier 121
 Sampson, Tom 119, 218
 Manson murders

Atkins, Susan 82
 Folger, Abigail 82
 Frykowski, Wojciech 82
 Kasabian, Linda 82
 Krenwinkel, Patricia 'Katie' 82
 Manson, Charles Milles 82
 Parent, Steven 82
 Polanski, Roman 82
 Sebring, Jay 82
 Tate, Sharon 82
 Watson, Charles 'Tex' 82
 Maples, William 310
 Martinez, Bob 333, 335, 340
Martyrs 345
 Massie, Jim 332
 Mattingly, Jim 105
 McChesney, Kathy 188, 217, 242, 248
 McClure, Ralph 192
 McLean, Joe 208
Megaphone magazine 293, 317
 junior-ed magazines 36
 Mhatre, Umesh 332
 Michaud, Stephen G. 317, 361
 Michigan
 Ann Arbor 269, 292
 Miller, Jeannette Rose 85
 Minerva, Mike 311, 315, 332
 Moody, Michael 304
 Mutter, Charles 332

N

Nash Rambler 58
 Neilsen, Captain George Q. 163
 Nelson, Polly 73, 157, 224, 325, 328, 330,
 332, 335, 336
 Nicholas, Liz 305
 Nicholson, Robert 338
 Nixon, Richard 154
 Nordheimer, Jon 327
 Norman, Arthur 54, 80, 329, 331
 Nursey, Joe 312, 313

O

O'Connell, John 179, 194, 244, 250, 254,

264, 266, 312
 Oliverson case
 Fifth Street Bridge 204
 Fromm, James 205
 Grand Junction 204
 Lincoln Park 204
 Oliverson, Denise Lynn 204, 245, 327,
 334, 336, 338
 Rushing, Doug 205
 Olympia 98, 99, 101, 103, 128, 132, 138,
 155
 Department of Emergency Services 128,
 130, 138, 141, 263
 Ondrak, Daryl 239, 242
 OPEC Oil Embargo 105, 122
 Oregon
 Albany 76
 Baker 85
 Creswell 105
 Eugene 49, 76, 103, 105, 198, 250
 Pendleton 155, 213
 Portland 74, 76, 78, 102, 155, 180
 Memorial Colosseum 105
 Salem 76-78, 82
 Oregon State University 77, 78
 Oscar's Restaurant 301
 O'Shaughnessy, Kevin 242
 Oswald, Lee Harvey 60

P

Packer, Jeanie 107
 Parker, Kathleen 332
 Parks case
 Fargo, Lorrain 127
 Harris, William R. 128
 Hoffman, Carl 127
 Memorial Union Hall 127
 Parks, Roberta Kathleen 198, 218, 227
 Parks' skull 197
 Sackett Hall 126, 127
 Schmidt, "Bunny" 126
 Smith, Cherrell 126
 Sumida, Edward 126
 viscerocranium 228

Parks, Kenneth James 331
 Partridge, Laurie Lynn 191
 Patchen, Don 71, 303, 305, 306
 pay phone 220
 Pedline Surgical Company 84, 88
 Pensacola 294, 343
 Pensacola Police Department 301, 303,
 304, 320
 Peterson, Heidi Brigit 118
 Philadelphia 27, 46, 48, 74, 76, 80
 Lafayette Hill 142, 149, 151
 Roxborough 47, 48
 Pitkin County (courthouse) Jail 259, 261
 Plymouth Coupe 62, 68
 Point of the Mountain. *See* Utah State Prison
 Presley, Elvis 262
 Prichep, Leslie S. 329
 Psychopathic Personality Inventory 33
 putrefaction 35, 37, 151
 cadaverine 35
 putrescine 35

Q

Queen Ann Hill case
 Allman, Terry 68
 Arnold, Herb 68
 Bowe, Joyce 68
 Lee, Paul 69
 Moore, Frank 69
 Ramon, Frank 68
 Sims, Homer 69
 Speck, Richard 69
 Stoss, George 68
 Trumbull, Lonnie 68, 69
 Wick, Lisa E. 68, 69

R

Raine, Adrian 32
 Ramsland, Katherine 362
 Rancourt case
 Barto Hall 124, 125
 Black Hall 125
 Boullion Library 123
 Bullat, Jerry 122, 123

- cast 125
 Curtis, Jane 122, 124
 D'Olivo, Kathleen Clara 123
 Ellensburg Washington State College 123
 Mary Grup Conference bridge 123
 metal brace 123
 Munson Hall 124
 Rancourt, Dennis 141
 Rancourt, Judy 125
 Rancourt skull 197
 Rancourt, Susan Elaine 123, 141, 167,
 198, 218, 388
 Rancourt, Vivian 337
 sling 122
 Storwick, Terry 123
 Teanaway 388
 tressle 123
 Ray, James Earl 75
 Ray, Tommy 81
 Reade, Susan 138
 Reagan, Ronald 323
 Reay, Donald 203
 Reed, Dick 153
 Reeves, Myrline Allen 292
 Reichert, Dave 325
 religion
 church 239, 293
 Congregational church 135
 demonically possessed 27
 "Beast" 27, 74, 360, 362
 God 27, 330, 336
 Jesus Christ 327, 336
 LDS church 163, 216
 LDS student branch 267
 Liz's Bishop 191
 Methodist church 48, 269
 Methodist Youth Fellowship 52
 Mormon church 194, 244, 245, 257, 293
 Mormon family 267
 Mormon Sunday school 194
 Mormon temple 342
 Sabbath 327
 Reneau, Russell 157
 Ressler, Robert 308
 Ridgeway, Gary Leon 48, 341
 Riet, Joel 176
 Robertson, Roberta 338
 Robertson, Shelley Kay 216
 Robertson, Shelly Kay 244
 Robinson, Ken 308
 Rogers, Ernst 77, 106, 123
 Rogers, Freda 31, 32, 77, 118
 Rose, Eleanor 148, 333, 338, 341
 Rosellini, Albert Dean 96, 251
 Rudd, Judge John 306, 313
 Rule, Ann 32, 52, 54, 63, 70, 74, 78, 93, 94,
 97, 98, 118, 122, 128, 153, 188, 203,
 233, 248, 249, 250, 256-258, 261,
 263, 275, 281, 291, 327, 329, 337,
 342
S
 Salt Lake City 139, 152
 Goodwill bin 201
 Granger 239, 242
 JB's restaurant 187
 Metropolitan Hall of Justice 242
 San Francisco 72, 74, 78, 84, 103, 104
 Mark Hopkins Hotel 101
 Palo Alto 71
 Santa Rosa hitchhiker murders 85
 O'Neil, Pat 85
 Santos, Bob 105
 Schaefer case
 Bonadies, Leigh Hainline 82
 Briscolina, Mary Alice 97, 98
 Crowder, Richard 95
 Farmer, Elsie Lina 97, 98
 female underwear 99
 Goodenough, Collette Marie 97, 99, 259
 Hallock, Carmen Marie 83, 99
 hunting knife 99
 Hutchens, Belinda 92
 Jessup, Georgia Crystal 96, 99, 149
 Leitner, Nancy 70
 Lowe, Debora Sue 92
 Nater, Pamela 70
 Place, Susan 96, 99, 149
 Rahn, Peggy 83

- rifle 99
- Rivera, Vincent 340
- rope 99
- Schaefer, Doris 99
- Schaefer, Gerard 220
- Schaefer, Gerard John 70, 85, 87, 95, 97, 98, 148, 151, 340
- Shilts, Kenneth Guy 83
- Stevenson, Wendy Brown 83
- Stone, Robert 151
- Trotter, Nancy Ellen 95
- Wells, Paula Sue 95
- Wilcox, Barbara Ann 97, 99, 259
- Schram, Donna 251, 252
- Schrock, Dick 102
- Schuster, Jim 207, 236
- Sea-Tac Airport 252
- Seattle
 - Burien 130, 146
 - Capitol Hill 87, 93, 118
 - Crime Prevention Advisory Commission 97, 98
 - Crisis Clinic 87, 97, 107
 - Edgewater Inn 101
 - Green Lake 73, 84, 85, 120, 139, 146
 - Lake Sammamish 95
 - Lake Washington 85
 - Magnolia District 253
 - Northgate Shopping Center 98
 - old floating bridge 135
 - Oly Hotel 109
 - Olympic Hotel 75, 122
 - Public Safety Building (Seattle PD) 98
 - Queen Ann Hill 26
 - Queen Ann Hill Safeway 68, 75
 - Sandpiper Tavern 82, 83, 107
 - Seattle Police Department 244
 - University District 73, 77, 82, 85, 96, 114, 129, 132, 140, 153
 - Walrus Tavern 86
 - White Sands 130
 - Yacht Club 72, 73, 74
- Severson, Bryan 248, 264
- Sexton, Mike 335
- sexuality
 - abortion 92, 107
 - anal intercourse 107, 246
 - autoerotic sexual activity. *See* sexuality: masturbation
 - bisexuality 73
 - bondage 107
 - condom 323
 - erotomanic obsession 323
 - gang-rape 331
 - homosexual nightclub 208
 - masturbation 23, 28-30, 58, 251
 - necrophilia 34, 132, 138, 200
 - oral-anal fetish 253
 - paper sack 105, 246
 - Playboy* magazine 192
 - pornography 27, 28, 48, 52, 55, 64, 74, 80, 89, 326, 327, 339, 346
 - pregnant 92
 - rape offenders 98
 - semen 114, 196
 - sex-gone-wrong 55
 - snow-dropping 105
 - sock fetish 36, 284, 293, 294, 317
 - speculum 109
 - strip joint 74
 - virginity 76, 89
 - voyeurism 30, 71
- Sharpe, Chris 106
- Sharp, Judge G. Kendall 332
- Shoemaker, Thomas 208
- Silberstein, Dana Middleton 337
- Simpson, Larry 313, 315
- S. J. Quinney Law School. *See* University of Utah: law school
- Smith case
 - Hillcrest High 248, 264
 - hyoid bone 171
 - Lamb's Canyon 170
 - Midvale 192
 - Pepperoni 167, 168, 169
 - Smith, Joan 338
 - Smith, Jolene 338
 - Smith, Louis 168, 253, 264, 314, 338
 - Smith, Melissa 167, 168, 218, 231, 248, 253, 264, 314, 334, 338, 393

Summit Park 171
 Smith, Debbie 253, 256
 Smith, Ronald E. 86, 94
 Snoqualmie Pass Cascade Conference 100
 Somers Point murders
 Davis, Susan 78, 79, 80, 329
 Faunce, Wood 78
 Kinzer, Thomas 80
 Ocean City
 Syben House 79
 Perry, Elizabeth 78-80, 329
 Ray, Tommy 81
 sling 79
 Stano, Gerald Eugene 49, 81, 328, 340
 Sparks, Karen Lee 108, 114, 117, 204, 206,
 233, 385
 Spenkelink, John Arthur 315
 Spock, Benjamin M. 55
 Sputnik 1 52
 Stanford University 27, 71, 72
 Stanley Elementary school 49
 Stapley, Rhonda 168
 Stolzheise, Ralph M. 206
 Storwick, Terry 50, 64, 85, 126, 218
 Storwick, Wendy 85
 Sullivan, Kevin 220, 227, 273, 281
 Suncadia Resort 93, 342
 Swenson, Ann 194, 258
 Swenson, Mark 194
 Swindler, Cathy 75
 Swindler, Herb 31, 75
 Szymankiewicz, Joseph 315

T

Tacoma 48, 74, 83, 100, 103, 132, 141
 Talkback radio 55
 Tallahassee Mall 280
 Tanay, Emanuel 315, 316, 332
 Tanner, John 326, 327, 330, 333, 336
 Tanner, Marsha 326, 330, 336
 Taylor, Jill Bolte 20
Ted Bundy: Conversations With A Killer 317
 "Ted" task force 198
 Temple University 27, 76, 77, 80, 89

Thayne, Emma Lou 267
 Thayne, Mel 267
The Deliberate Stranger 79, 328, 341, 343
The Joy of Sex 106, 246
The Last Murder 285
 Thematic Apperception Test (TAT) 256
The Only Living Witness 23, 317, 343
The Phantom Prince 58, 84, 323
The Sting 269
The Stranger Beside Me 75, 252
 Thissen, Alice 208
 Thompson, Gerald "Jerry" 85, 96, 236, 237,
 242, 244, 250, 253, 259
 Thompson, Linda Sue 260
 Thompson, Lynn Alan 315
 Tomlinson, Deborah Lee 105
 Tucker, Frank 306
 Turner, Janice 314
Two-Lane Blacktop 87

U

University of Puget Sound 27, 59, 61, 68,
 89, 110
 law school 104, 107, 122, 126, 128
 University of Utah 153, 245
 Bailiff Hall 207, 216, 236
 law school 92, 93, 99, 104, 106, 126, 193,
 244
 University of Washington 27, 69, 71, 73,
 74, 77, 85-87, 90, 94, 106, 108, 132
 Camelot Program 250
 law school 97
 McMahon Hall 69, 70
 Washington Park Arboretum 148
 Utah
 Big Cottonwood Canyon 168
 Blacksmith Fork 170
 Cedar City 322
 Fairview 187, 340
 Fairview Canyon 340
 Green River (City) 193, 206
 Layton 217
 Ogden 54, 83, 85, 86, 107, 170, 192, 216,
 245, 246, 262

Provo 192, 214, 216, 250, 263
 Snowbird 192
 Wasatch Mountains 85, 189
 Utah State Prison 257

V

Valentine's Day 296
 Vance, Robert 330
 Vietnam war 84
 violence in the media 327
 Violent Criminal Apprehension Program
 (ViCAP) 325
 Von Drehle, David J. 343
 Vortman, Marlin 101, 103, 106, 107, 234
 Voshall, Larry 138, 235, 324

W

Ware, Stephen "Buzzy" 261
 Warner, Bob 242
 Washington State
 Arlington
 Lincoln Bridge 85
 Cle Elum 96
 Colfax
 Fiesta Motel 99
 Crystal Mountain Ski Resort 198
 Davenport 100
 Dungeness Recreation Area 129
 Dupont 99, 101, 103
 Ellensburg 55, 94, 102, 126, 138, 213,
 254, 324
 Enumclaw 100
 Fort Lewis 129
 Hoquiam 95
 Humptulips River 95
 Issaquah 95, 104, 129, 131, 135, 138,
 142, 143, 150, 151, 160, 252, 340
 Lacamas Lake 312
 Mercer Island 135, 140
 Neah Bay 93
 North Bend 138, 139, 196, 252
 North Cascades Highway 96
 Richland 97
 Snoqualmie Pass 52, 110

Spokane 93, 97, 99, 107, 141, 191, 270,
 318
 Taylor Mountain 110, 114, 136, 197, 198,
 252, 341
 Vancouver 48, 88, 141
 Yakima 85, 100, 139, 155
 Yakima River 99, 139
 Washington State University
 Stevens Hall 87
 Weaver, Sandra Jean 139
 Weiner, Diana 329, 333, 335, 340, 343
 Welch Fun Cars 187, 232
 Wilburn, Chuck 251
 Wilcox case
 Arnette Drive 163
 Capital Reef National Park 165, 168
 Couch, Dennis 163, 165
 knife 165
 Neilsen Jr., George Q. 163
 orchard 163, 164, 166, 167
 Wilcox, Connie 163, 167, 338
 Wilcox, Nancy 163, 218, 227, 334, 338
 Woodrow Wilson High School 59, 60, 63
 Nova 50, 59, 61
 Wootton, Noall T. 191, 262
 Wyoming
 Laramie 199
 Rock Springs 198

X

X, Malcolm 61

Y

YMCA 269
 Yocom, David 171, 189, 253, 259

Z

Zimmer, Bruce 155
 Zloch, William 329
 Zodiac killer 87

Appendix: Missing west coast girls

This appendix contains a list of about 70 missing females age-appropriate between 1963 and 1975 primarily for Washington State, Oregon and California. British Columbia victims, the so-called Highway of Tears victims, have been omitted on the grounds that they are not feasibly related. Most (not all) of the victims in this list cannot be reasonably attributed to Ted, however, since the list was disseminated to authorities shortly after Ted was arrested in 1975, it represents an interesting snapshot of how authorities were thinking about him at the time. The Zodiac killer has been left off this list although he could reasonably be suspected as the perpetrator of some of these cases. Data (images and text) in this section have been extracted and weaved together from the King County and Google Newspaper Archives. In many cases, images have been enhanced due to poor condition of the source material. The reader is advised to remember that the victims listed here were real people that had honor despite the circumstances they found themselves in. [Note: color fills represent timeline possibilities.]

Name: Judith Gail Williamson (18).

Missing: October 29, 1963.

Found: April 1966.

Albany: suburb of greater San Francisco, CA.

Coed at Berkeley University. Missing early in the morning from near her home in Albany while posting a letter. On November 12, 1963, two bloodstained books belonging to Judith were found at Berkeley University in a garbage bin. Shortly afterward, a pool of blood was found in the university campus garage, matching Judith's blood type. She was eventually found in ravine near Santa Cruz. Mostly upper portion bones. Her breastbone had been pierced. Also found were her blouse, skirt, stockings and slip. Her blouse had 15 tears in the fabric. Apparently stabbed to death based on cuts in her clothes. A paring knife was found near her body. Another report said she was wearing a black cardigan. The ex-Mayor's son, Joseph Egenberger (33), turned himself in to Oakland police in November 30, 1977 and confessed to the murder. Was her schoolmate at Albany High School and at UC Berkeley. He was described as "a brilliant student." He had sometimes driven her to the university. According to his testimony, she had resisted his vows of love, he got angry. Convinced by his lawyer to plead not guilty despite his confession, he was convicted of second-degree murder, sentenced to five-to-life and eventually set free to live with his conscience. [JOSEPH EGENBERGER confirmed].



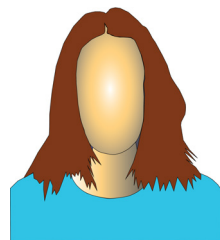
Name: Barbara Jane Morritz (18).

Missing: February 9, 1964.

Found: February 11, 1964.

Monterey: about 75 miles (120 km) south of San Francisco., CA.

Motel maid. Last seen at a Salinas bus station. Found lying off the shoulder of a dead-end country road between Salinas and Monterey. Clothing bunched around mid-riff. Panties around ankles. Bra twisted around neck. Raped.



Cheri Josephine Bates (18).

Missing: October 30, 1966.

Found: October 31, 1966.

Riverside: suburb of greater Los Angeles, CA.

A 1966 graduate of Riverside's Ramona High School, Bates was beaten and stabbed multiple times with a short-bladed knife. There was no evidence of robbery or sexual molestation. There were no witnesses. Bates had been studying in the Riverside Community College library prior to the attack. She left the library at 9:00 p.m. to head home in her VW bug. She was found 6:30 a.m. in the morning face down fully clothed in a dirt alley on Terracina Drive between two unoccupied houses on campus. Her throat was slashed and she had several stab wounds in her back. Her car was found intentionally disabled approximately 100 yards from the alley. A men's Timex watch with a band suggesting a seven-inch wrist was found at the scene, along with a military-style heel print indicating a size 8-10 shoe. The origin of the watch was eventually traced to a military post, possibly in England. The shoes could have been sold at nearby March Air Force Base. Investigators established the watch was ripped from the attacker's wrist during the struggle. Although the watch stopped at 12:24 a.m., it's believed the crime occurred a few hours earlier and that Bates died very quickly. [ZODIAC is one suspect].



Nikki Alexandra Benedict (14).

Missing: May 1, 1967.

Found: May 5, 1967.

Poway is a suburb of greater San Diego, CA.

Poway, late afternoon. Benedict was hanging out with her friend when they see a strange man looking at them. The surviving teen takes note of the man's face and the make of the vehicle. 6:00 p.m. Benedict leaves her friend's home located on Halper Road (12784 off Pomerado Road) and heads to her home on Olive Tree Lane. Much of the path was through open fields—typical in Poway those days—from Pomerado and Carriage roads, extending to Community Road. She was attacked near an access road located 75 yards west of where she was initially found. Ron Fisk (11) was riding his bike when he spotted Benedict injured on the ground less than 100 yards from the intersection of Poway and Carriage roads. Benedict apparently crawled after being stabbed in the chest and neck, seeking help. Fisk rode to his father's nearby shop, told his dad and the elder Fisk called the Poway Fire Department for assistance. The fire department's Lewis "Pat" Wills told the Poway News Chieftain he recalls arriving with the ambulance. He noticed the girl's shallow breathing, then bandaged two stab wounds in her chest before transporting her to Palomar Medical Center, where she died about 30 minutes later. A coroner's report indicates there was no sexual assault, but the stab wounds were likely from a short knife, causing the fatal injury.



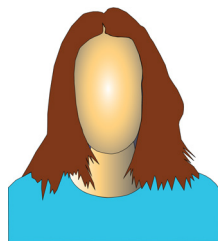
Susan Marie Cardwell (18).

Missing: May 19, 1967.

Found: May 25, 1967.

San Martin is a small town about 248 miles (400 km) south of Portland, OR.

Formerly of White City, Oregon. Found near San Martin, somewhere along the highway near San Jose adjoining a prune orchard. Clothes pulled up around neck, underclothes pulled down below buttocks. Shot 15 times above waist, jaw broken, skull fractured. Coroner's deputies said she had been dead a week and there were indications of a sex attack.



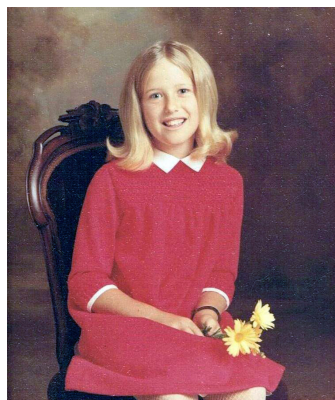
Deborah Lee Shelton (12).

Missing: January 3, 1969.

Found: March 8, 1969.

Aptos is a coastal town about 62 miles (100 km) south of San Francisco, CA.

Last seen approximately 10 a.m. in front of Farmer's Market, Soquel Drive, Aptos. Family received extortion call. Found Santa Cruz, near creek, strangled with her own panties, hands taped, decomposed, clothing pulled up. Tape that had covered her mouth had slipped down around her neck during decomposition of the body.



Laura Lee Asynithe Flink (21).

Missing: February 21, 1969 [Ted in New Jersey around this date].

Not found.

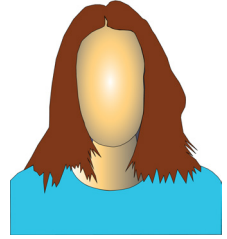
Aberdeen is a coastal town of Washington State, about 50 miles west of Olympia, WA.

Flink was last seen in Aberdeen, WA, at approximately 4:00 p.m. She was driving her live-in boyfriend's red 1967 Ford Ranchero with WA license plates numbered U23307 on County Road 101 towards Moclips, WA, to pick up some furniture and children's clothing. She never arrived there and has never been seen again. Flink's brown leather jacket was found on a sidewalk in Hoquiam, WA on February 23, and mailed to her post office box in Aberdeen, but she never picked it up. The car she was driving was found in the 700 block of J Street in Hoquiem on February 24. Shortly before her disappearance, Flink received legal custody of her 16-month-old son. She was employed as a waitress in 1969, and had no other source of income. She may have been three months pregnant at the time of her disappearance.



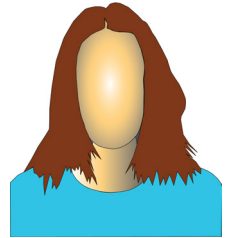
Judy Gail Lattaker (22).
Missing: April 10, 1969.
Found: April 10, 1969.
Oakland is a city of greater San Francisco, CA.

Found Alameda, Oakland, near waterfront on gravel road. Skull crushed. Needle marks on body, several recent. Nude below waist. Rape undetermined.



Jane Doe (?).
Missing: date unknown.
Found: July 6, 1969.
Long Beach is a coastal suburb of greater Los Angeles, CA.

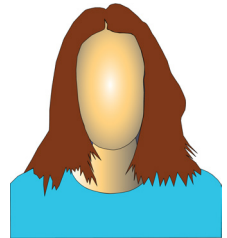
Dumped behind store in brush, Long Beach. Partially decomposed. Strangled. Ankles and hands bound with yellow cord. Clothing found 1 mile from scene.



Katherine Marie Butts (19).
Missing: unknown.
Found: August 29, 1969.

Long Beach is a coastal suburb of greater Los Angeles, CA.

Dumped behind Long Beach store in some brush. Body partially decomposed. Strangled, ankles and hands bound with yellow cord. Clothing found 1 mile from scene.



Elaine Louise Davis (17).
Missing: December 1, 1969.
Found: December 19, 1969
Walnut Creek is a suburb of greater San Francisco, CA.

Abducted through a sliding rear window while baby-sitting her 3-year-old sister at the family's Walnut Creek home. Police found no evidence of a struggle at the scene. In a field behind her house they did recover a button Davis had been planning to sew onto her coat. Two days later, a motorist discovered the coat on Highway 17 near Santa Cruz. Authorities found the body of a female floating off Light House Point near Santa Cruz, CA. In 2000 it was identified as Elaine Davis. Davis' body showed some signs of cartilage damage in her neck, indicating that she might have been strangled. No information about clothing when found. A shoe was found on I-680, and a coat on route 17, both believed to have belonged to Davis. [PHILIP JOSEPH HUGHES/ZODIAC suspected].



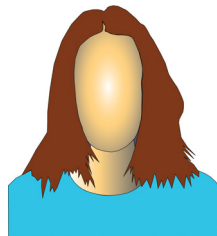
Leona LaRell Roberts (16).

Missing: December 11, 1969

Found: December 28, 1969

Rodeo is a suburb of greater San Francisco, CA.

A Napa Valley beauty college student, Miss Roberts disappeared from her boyfriend's apartment in Rodeo as she waited for him to return from work. A neighbor said she heard a scream just minutes after Miss Roberts arrived. A man was seen speeding off in a station wagon. Her smock was found on a sofa and a Christmas tree was overturned. Her nude body was discovered on a beach near Bolinas Lagoon, Marin County. Death was apparently caused by aspiration from a virus and there was a suggestion of ligature marks on her wrists and ankles. The exact time of death was undetermined but put at around 10 days prior to the time of discovery. She had been on the beach 5 days by one estimate. Clothes not found. [PHILIP JOSEPH HUGHES/ZODIAC suspected].



Cindy Lee Mellin (19).

Missing: January 20, 1970.

Not found.

Ventura is a coastal suburb about 50 km north of Los Angeles, CA.

Mellin was employed by the Broadway Department Store in the Buenaventura Shopping Center, Ventura. She left work shortly after closing and was last seen standing next to her car in the shopping center parking lot while an unidentified male changed her tire. Her vehicle found with rear flat tire caused by sharp instrument that punctured the sidewall.



Cosette Ann Ellison (15).

Missing: March 3, 1970.

Found: January 1, 1971.

Moraga is a suburb of greater San Francisco, CA.

Ellison was a sophomore at Campolindo High. She was last seen about 3:30 p.m. in the driveway of her Canyon Road home in Moraga, after getting off a school bus (in front of her Canyon road home). Found in a ravine (or creek bed) off of Morgan Territory Road, nude, partially decomposed. Her clothing was found 1 mile from the scene. [PHILIP JOSEPH HUGHES suspected].



Patricia Ann King (20).

Missing: March 5, 1970.

Found: March 6, 1970.

Pleasant Hill is a suburb of greater San Francisco, CA.

Contra Costa County. Left dance class at Diablo Valley College, Pleasant Hill. Her body was found in the Diablo Stadium by a "construction" worker from Oakland who was one of the men working on the unfinished stadium at the collage. Her body was found near the pressbox next to a brick wall, separating the stadiums upper level from the parking lot where her car was parked. Strangled with her black leg-gings. It is not clear if she was raped. Nude below waist, bra pulled up. Car found in a lot in front of stadium. [PHILIP JOSEPH HUGHES suspected]. Image best quality available.



Judith Ann Hakari (23).
Missing: March 7, 1970.
Found: April 25, 1970.
Sacramento is an inland city about 62 miles (100 km) northeast San Francisco, CA.

Placer County, Sacramento. Hakari worked her usual shift at Sutter General Hospital, getting off work at 11 p.m. She was last seen leaving the hospital parking lot around 11:30 p.m. Her fiancé, who was waiting for her at her Markston Road apartment, on the corner of Markston and Alta-Arden Way (then called Glendale Ave), became alarmed when Judith did not come home. He found her car parked in her assigned parking stall in the apartment building parking lot. She must have been immediately seized, either at gun point or simply knocked unconscious and abducted because her car was found unlocked and her keys were on the floorboard. A couple was hiking about Weimar on Highway 80 on the way to Reno and Lake Tahoe, on Ponderosa Way, looking for an old mine, when they found see a human knee protruding from the ground. According to a Sacramento Bee article she had been buried in a white sack. Under the body was a gray zip-up sweatshirt with a pocket on either side of the zipper. Other sources said that she was buried in her nurse uniform, which was open in front and her underwear was found beneath her. Strangled by a stocking (her hyoid bone was crushed), face crushed with a rock to the point where she was unrecognizable. Some reports say she was raped, others not. Her watch and purse were off her body.



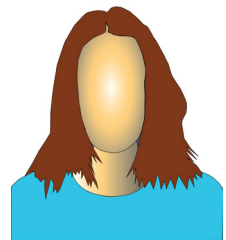
Marie Antoinette Anstey (24).
Missing: March 13, 1970.
Found: March 21, 1970.
Vallejo is a suburb of greater San Francisco, CA.

Last seen in parking lot at Coronado Inn, city of Vallejo. Found lying off isolated road in some heavy brush. Nude. Blow to head followed by drowning. No clothes found. Suspected drug overdose (later pronounced accidental death).



Lois Jean Reicher (21).
Missing: September 27, 1970.
Found: September 28, 1970.
Redlands is a far western suburb of Los Angeles, CA.

Last seen leaving University of Redlands Library enroute to dorms. Found in an orange grove on university property, nude, raped, died from head injuries as a result of aspirating her own stomach juices.



Nancy Marie Bennallack (28).

Missing: October 25, 1970.

Found: October 26, 1970.

Sacramento is an inland city about 62 miles (100 km) northeast San Francisco, CA.

Sacramento. She was stalked. The killer jumped the fence, climbed up the gas meter and onto her second story apartment balcony in order to get in. She must have jumped out of bed and met her fate. She was stabbed or sliced repeatedly over 30 times, the slices cutting her throat as well. She was found in her underwear, some of her clothes beneath her. Cuts on her hands indicate she struggled with her killer, and a trail of blood leading from her apartment indicated she wounded her attacker. A court reporter for four years, she was engaged to Chief Public Defender Farris Salamy. They were to be married November 28, 1970. Salamy said he last saw Miss Bennallack about 11:30 p.m. Sunday at her apartment. A neighbor said she heard what sounded like someone crying about 1:30 a.m. Miss Bennallack's body was discovered after she failed to show up for work Monday.



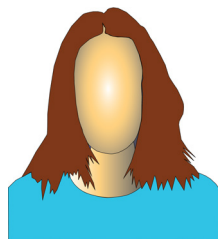
Wacharlain Marnil (20).

Missing: October 27, 1970.

Found: October 28, 1970.

Location unknown. CA.

Oriental. Abducted from a bus stop. Found in a schoolyard. Strangled, badly beaten, raped. Nude below waste, skirt pulled up and bra pulled down. Panties and hose not found.



Carol Beth Hilburn (22).

Missing: November 14, 1970.

Found: ?

Sacramento is an inland city about 62 miles (100 km) northeast San Francisco, CA.

Nurse's assistant. On November 13, 1970, she was visiting Sacramento from Sonoma County where she worked at the Sunlight Royal Convalescent Hospital. That late Friday night she visited an old bartender friend at the The Zodiac Club on West Capitol Avenue (a biker's hangout). From there she went to Lloyd Hickey's Forty Grand Club on Del Paso Boulevard, Sacramento. She had once worked there and chatted until the early morning hours. Was beaten to death after a night of bar-hopping. After she left (around 5 a.m. Saturday morning), nothing was seen of her until her body was found several miles north of there in the rural Rio Linda area. It had been dragged naked from the car that had brought it and dumped in the open area at the corner of Ascot and 4th Street. She was only wearing one suede boot/sock. Her face and skull had been beaten to a pulp. She might also have been strangled. She had not been sexually molested.



Robin Ann Graham (18).

Missing: November 15, 1970.

Not found.

Santa Monica is a coastal suburb of Los Angeles city, CA.

Was last seen by California Highway Patrol officers at approximately 2:00 a.m. beside her car on the shoulder of the southbound Hollywood Freeway near the Santa Monica off-ramp, LA; she was in the presence of a dark-haired white man estimated to be in his mid-twenties who drove a late 1950s model Chevrolet Corvette C1, pale blue or green with primer. Graham used a call box to ask that a CHP emergency operator let her parents know she had run out of gas. Graham's younger sister took the call and relayed the information to her parents upon their return home at approximately 2:30 a.m. They went immediately to the location where they found Robin's car, but she was not there.



Christine Marie Eastin (19).

Missing: January 18, 1971.

Not found.

Hayward is a bay suburb of San Francisco, CA.

Disappeared from Hayward, San Francisco. Eastin borrowed her former boyfriend's 1969 Ford Maverick in the evening. She was going shopping with a friend and promised to wash the car before returning it later that night. Eastin bought a pair of boots while shopping, dropped her friend off, and then continued to Charlie's Car Wash, a self-service wash on Mission Boulevard in Hayward. The Maverick was located at the wash during the early morning hours of January 19, the following day. Eastin had apparently completed washing the vehicle's exterior before she vanished. The car was locked and papers from the interior were laying on the pavement outside of the driver's door. There was no sign of Eastin and she has never been seen again.



Lisa Smith (17).

Missing: March 16, 1971.

Not found.

Santa Rosa lies about 62 miles (100 km) north of San Francisco, CA.

From Petaluma, was last seen hitchhiking along Hearn Avenue in Santa Rosa. Little else is known about her.



Debra T. Pscholka (12).

Missing: June 5, 1971.

Not found.

Corona is a south western suburb of greater Los Angeles, CA.

Debra was last seen in Corona, Riverside County, LA, at approximately 8:15 p.m. She went to a now-defunct Corona Theater on 6th Street with friends. (Now, the building is a church called Amor Outreach.) The staff caught her smoking and asked her to leave the theater. She left alone, telling friends she was going to the park. She has never been heard from again.



Elizabeth Marie "Betty" Cloer (22).

Missing: June 19, 1971.

Found: June 19, 1971.

Sacramento is an inland city about 62 miles (100 km) northeast of San Francisco, CA.

Last seen departing Sacramento bar with suspect. Found same day, end of dead-end road in remote foothill of Cameron Park. Nude except bra. All other clothing except purse was located at scene. Shot 3 times with 0.32 caliber automatic. Head crushed to pulp with large rock. No evidence of sexual attack. She had a five-year old son. October 30, 2003, PHILIP ARTHUR THOMPSON was charged with her murder.



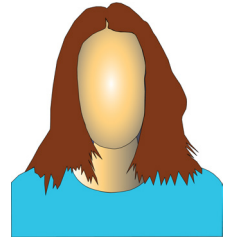
Rosa Linda Cantu Zuniga (18).

Missing: July 10, 1971.

Found: July 26, 1971.

San Jose is a suburb of greater San Francisco, CA.

Last seen 1300 East Williams, San Jose. Found in La Selva Beach, in a rural area gully, beneath a tree, near a flood control dam, approximately 275 yards off Larkin Valley Road between HWY and San Andreas Road which runs parallel in this area. Covered in a sheet, stabbed in the neck, decomposed, hands tied behind back with a scarf, handbag near body but purse never recovered. Wallet containing driver's license found later several miles from scene. 0.12 % alcohol in blood. Hitchhiked, partied and took drugs.



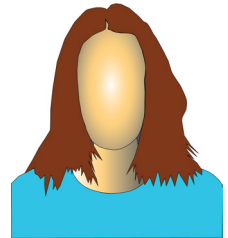
Susan Marie Lynch (22).

Missing: July 29, 1971.

Found: July 31, 1971.

Santa Cruz is an Oceanside suburb about 62 miles (100 km) south of San Francisco, CA.

Last seen hitchhiking from Santa Cruz to Nevada City, Northgate area. Found in shallow grave near drainage ditch in Rio Linda. Not wearing her bra, but had on a blouse and shoes. Cut-off pants were removed and left in the grave. Rendered unconscious via blow to face and buried alive. James C. Hosand, chief deputy coroner of Sacramento, said the only injury found in an autopsy was a dislocated jaw. Raped. Died as a result of inhaling sand and suffocating.



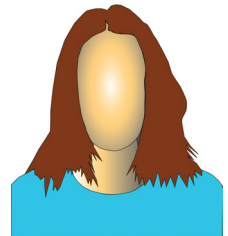
Linda Susan Dudley (22).

Missing: August 22, 1971.

Found: August 27, 1971.

Lake Merced lies on the oceanside of San Francisco city, CA.

Known to work as a prostitute. Found lying in some brush on the bank of Lake Merced. Stabbed 3 times in chest and abdominal area. Nude. No clothing found.



Yvonne Lisa Weber (13, left).
Maurine Louise Sterling (12, right).

Missing: February 4, 1972.

Found: December 28, 1972.

Santa Rosa lies about 100 km north of San Francisco, CA.

The two girls were dropped off at the Redwood Empire Ice Arena around 4:00 p.m. They were last seen hitchhiking on Guerneville Road, northwest of Santa Rosa. Their bodies were found 2.2 miles north of Porter Creek Road on Franz Valley Road, down a steep embankment approximately 66 feet off the east side of the roadway. A single earring, orange beads and a 14-carat gold necklace with cross were found at the scene. Cause of death could not be determined from the skeletal remains.



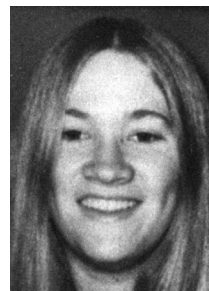
Kim Wendy Allen (19).

Missing: March 4, 1972.

Found: March 5, 1972.

San Rafael lies about 12 miles (20 km) north across the Golden Gate Bridge, CA.

Kim was given a ride by two men from her job at Larkspur Natural Foods to San Rafael. They last saw her at approximately 5:20 pm hitchhiking to school near the Bell Avenue entrance to Highway 101, northbound, carrying a large wooden soy barrel with red Chinese characters on it. Her body was found the following day down an embankment in a creek bed twenty feet off Enterprise Road in Santa Rosa. Nude. She had been bound at the ankles and wrists, raped and slowly strangled with a clothesline for an estimated thirty minutes. There were cuts on her chest. Semen was recovered from the body and a single gold loop earring was found at the site. Markings at the top of the embankment and a possible leg impression in the loam indicated the assailant likely slipped or fell while throwing or transporting the body. The two men who gave her a ride, one of whom was given and passed a polygraph test, were ruled out as suspects.



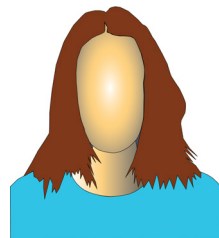
Jane Doe (?).

Missing: March 22, 1972.

Found: ?

Ensenada lies about 62 miles (100 km) south of San Diego, CA.

A body was found at Ensenada Beach, Baja California.



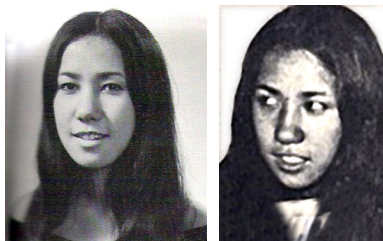
Jeanette Kamahele (20).

Missing: April 25, 1972.

Not found.

Santa Rosa lies about 62 miles (100 km) north of San Francisco, CA.

Was last seen hitchhiking on the Cotati onramp off Highway 101 in Santa Rosa. A friend of hers was going to stop and pick her up, but before the friend could do this, another vehicle pulled over and she was picked up by a 20 to 30-year-old Caucasian male with an Afro-type hairstyle, driving a faded brown 1970-72 Chevrolet pickup truck.



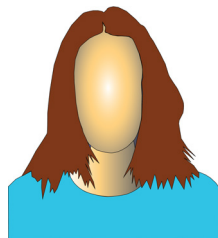
Sandra June Petros (18).

Missing: April 29, 1972.

Found: April 30, 1972.

Carmel Valley lies about 125 miles (200 km) south of San Francisco, CA.

Last seen in Sambos restaurant in company of white male at 7:30 p.m. Found 2.5 miles east of Carmel Valley Village in secluded brushy area near Carmel River. Body located 30 feet from roadway. Nude from waist down except socks. In her hand were her torn panties. Other clothes found in vicinity. Shot twice in head with 0.25 caliber weapon. Possible drugs related crime. Zig Zag cigarette papers were found in her pocket.



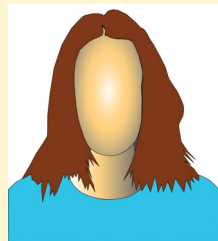
Beverly May Jenkins (16).

Missing: May 25, 1972 [Ted cannot be ruled out for this date].

Found: June 5, 1972.

Springfield is a suburb of Eugene, Oregon. It lies about 93 miles (150 km) south of Portland, OR.

Last seen in Springfield hitchhiking at cafe enroute to Roseburg. Found alongside roadway, just off Interstate 5 about 15 miles south of Cottage Grove. Asphyxiated, throat slit, head bashed with rock, raped. Pants pulled down, torso nude. Branches placed over victim in mud. Keppel makes passing reference to her.



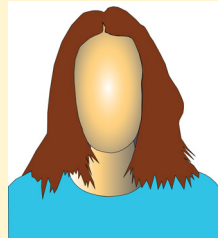
Jane Pellett (28).

Missing: June 7, 1972 [Ted cannot be ruled out for this date].

Found: June 26, 1972.

Salem is a city in Oregon. It lies about 37 miles (60 km) south of Portland, OR.

Last seen in Salem restaurant at 8:05 p.m. Found on a busy roadside. Grave prepared nearby, brush placed on victim. Rosary found. Nothing else is known about her.



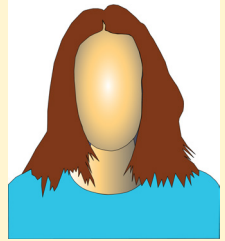
Geneva Joy Martin Irvin (19).

Missing: June 10, 1972 [Ted cannot be ruled out for this date].

Found: June 16, 1972.

Salem is a city in Oregon. It lies about 37 miles (60 km) south of Portland, OR.

Salem. Wife of Harvey N. Irvin. Mother of Dahphina Joy Irvin. Possibly hitchhiking. Found face down in a ditch beside Lake Creek Road, two miles south of Halsey and just west of Highway 99-E near Albany (just south of Corvallis where Roberta Parks went out). The body was badly decomposed and a tentative identification from incomplete dental records was performed. She was clad only in a topcoat and a pair of tennis shoes. Having a husband and child makes her decomposed discovery odd, since she should have been missed as early as June 15, but no records of her missing exist. Police intimated she had been missing since June 1.



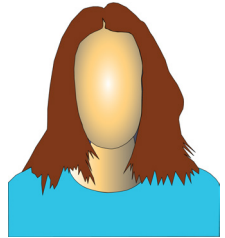
Maureen Patricia Field (19).

Missing: November 14, 1972.

Found: February 15, 1973.

Pleasant Hill is a suburb of greater San Francisco, CA.

Last seen leaving work K-Mart store in Pleasant Hill. Body found at foot of Mount Diablo. Found down a roadside embankment near creek in brushy area. Decomposed. Nude. Possibly stabbed to death. [PHILIP JOSEPH HUGHES suspected].



Lori Lee Kursa (13).

Missing: November 20, 1972.

Found: December 14, 1972.

Santa Rosa lies about 62 miles (100 km) north of San Francisco, CA.

A Lawrence Cook Middle School student, was reported missing by her mother on November 11, 1972 after disappearing while they shopped at a U-Save Market, Santa Rosa. Apparently Lori ran away. She was last seen on November 20 or 21 in Santa Rosa while visiting friends. She had been known to hitchhike occasionally. Her frozen remains were located in a ravine approximately fifty feet off Calistoga Road, northeast of Rincon Valley in Santa Rosa. The killer had thrown the body at least thirty feet over an embankment. Cause of death was a broken neck with compression and hemorrhage of the spinal cord. Lori had not been raped and likely died one to two weeks prior to discovery. A possible witness to her abduction later came forward stating that on an evening somewhere between December 3 and 9, while on Parkhurst Drive he saw two men push a girl fitting Lori's description into the back of a van driven by a Caucasian man with an Afro-type hairstyle. The vehicle then sped north on Calistoga Road.



Barbara Jean Stroud (18).

Missing: January 7, 1973.

Found: January 10, 1973.

Willits lies 137 miles (230 km) north of San Francisco, and about 80 miles (130 km) north of Santa Rosa, CA.

Approximately 11:30 p.m. Barbara dropped her boyfriend off at his residence within Willits city limits, then traveled north on Highway 101 towards her residence. Approximately 2 miles north of Willits city limits, evidence showed her vehicle was forced off the roadway. Coincidentally, approximately 30 minutes after leaving her boyfriend's residence, a Mendocino County Sheriff's Deputy was enroute to a call for service in Laytonville when he observed Stroud's vehicle parked alongside Highway 101 and noticed it was unoccupied. After handling the call in Laytonville the Deputy returned to Stroud's vehicle and noticed her personal belongings inside the vehicle. The Deputy checked the vehicle's registration and learned the vehicle was not wanted or stolen. The Deputy then left the area. Approximately 2:00 a.m. Stroud's parents phoned the Sheriff's Office and reported her missing. A search was conducted but she was not located. Her nude body was located in a remote area within 2 miles of where her vehicle was located. Her clothing was later found approximately 1 mile away from where her body was discovered. Her glasses, a ring and panties were missing. An autopsy revealed she had been sexually assaulted and strangled to death.



Leslie Marie Perlov (21).

Missing: February 13, 1973.

Found: February 16, 1973.

Palo Alto is a suburb of greater San Francisco, CA.

Perlov worked as a legal secretary in the North County Law Library in Palo Alto. Co-workers there were the last to see her alive. Perlov's car, an orange Chevrolet was first spotted parked at the gate of a dead-end road on Stanford land near the intersection of Page Mill Road and Junipero Serra Boulevard in the afternoon by a passing off-duty Palo Alto policeman, who said he saw her talking to a young man with long blond hair. A beige auto was parked nearby. Perlov's Chevrolet Nova was found abandoned at the gate in the evening. Her body was found in a clump of bushes in an area of rolling oak tree covered hills south of Stanford University (at the site of the Old Quarry near the intersection of Stanford Avenue and the Foothill Expressway). Her skirt had been pulled up around her waist and her pantyhose stuffed in her mouth. Scarf knotted around neck, coat pulled up over shoulders, blouse unbuttoned, bra pushed up over breasts. Boots found in stream 80 feet from body. Purse missing. Captain Frank Mosunic said "she had to walk there. She wasn't dragged". It appeared she had not been sexually molested. If Ted was responsible for Perlov's murder, she may be the most likely candidate due as there is no information of Ted's whereabouts between February 10-27, 1973. Ted has "County Council" penned in his 1973 diary for February 13.



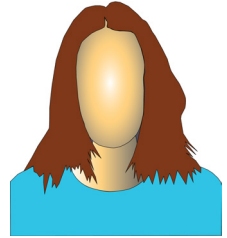
Susan Gail McGlaughlin (20).

Missing: March 2, 1973.

Found: March 3, 1973.

Sacramento is an inland city about 62 miles (100 km) northeast San Francisco, CA.

Last seen enroute Sacramento, hitchhiking from Berkeley to Oakland. Found in mountains near Kyburg, 150 yards north of Highway 50. Nude from waist down except boots. Levi pants found nearby with complete front cut out. Bra found cut in several pieces. May have been bound with adhesive tape. Backpack found on top of a restroom in Alder Creek campgrounds, 6 miles from where body located. Alcohol found in blood.



Kathleen Edna Rodgers (16).

Missing: March 3, 1973.

Not found.

Oroville lies about 150 miles (240 km) north of San Francisco, and about 70 miles (112 km) north of Sacramento, CA.

Last seen by her stepmother Elda Stevens after an argument at approximately 12:00 p.m. at their residence at 1512 Keko Street in Oroville. She was reported missing the same day.



Rosa Vasquez (20).

Missing: May 26, 1973.

Found: May 29, 1973.

San Francisco city, CA.

Worked at Letterman General Hospital, Presidio, San Francisco. Body found lying in shrubbery, San Francisco Golden Gate Park. Strangled. Nude except bra around neck. Semen in vagina, mouth and rectum. Image constructed from IdentiKit, unverified.



Yvonne Quilantang (15).

Missing: June 8, 1973.

Found: June 9, 1973.

San Francisco city, CA.

Last seen in San Francisco. Found in some bushes of Bayview District vacant lot. Nude. Raped. Strangled. No clothes found. She was seven months pregnant at the time of her death. Image from drawing, unverified.



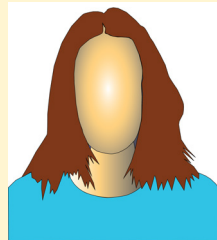
Allison Lynn Cauffman (15).

Missing: June 20, 1973 [Ted cannot be ruled out for this date].

Found: June 21 1973.

Portland is the northernmost city of Oregon and sits south across the border from Vancouver, Washington State, OR.

Missing from Portland. Found by swimmers near Blue Lake Park between North Marine Drive and Columbia River (just east of Portland). Nude. Strangled.



Rose Lena Cole (16).

Missing: July 1973

Not found.

Oakland is a suburb of greater San Francisco, CA.

Disappeared from Oakland, Alameda County, California, last seen sometime in July 1973. Rose contacted her parents again when she was 18. Her disappearance may be linked to the Synanon Foundation, a religious cult.



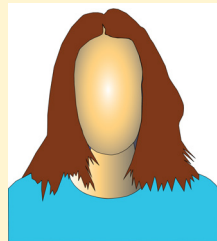
Laurie Lee Canaday (18).

Missing: July 1973 [Ted cannot be ruled out for this period].

Found: July 1973.

Portland is the northernmost city of Oregon and sits south across the border from Vancouver, Washington State, OR.

Portland. Died of head injuries sustained after she fell or was pushed from a speeding car. Very little else is known about this case.



Angela Thomas (16).

Missing: July 1, 1973.

Found: July 2, 1973.

San Francisco city, CA.

Last seen leaving friend's house San Francisco. Found lying in the schoolyard of Benjamin Franklin Junior High, San Francisco. Murdered by asphyxiation. Nude. No clothing found. Image best quality available.



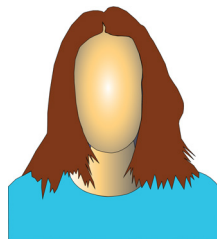
Linda Ann O'Keefe (11).

Missing: July 6, 1973.

Found: July 7, 1973.

Corona del Mar is a suburb in Orange County, California, about 45 miles (62 km) south of Los Angeles, CA.

A student at Lincoln Intermediate School in Corona del Mar, Linda Ann O'Keefe was used to walking home from school. On the day she disappeared, however, she had called her mother and asked for a ride home, but she was told that she would have to walk. A bicyclist found her at about 10:00 a.m. the next morning in a ditch beside Back Bay Road. She had been raped and strangled. She was clothed except for her shoes and underpants. The assailant had ejaculated over her vaginal area. Several witnesses said they saw a young girl fitting O'Keefe's description getting into a van at about 1:15 p.m. on the afternoon that she disappeared. The van was described as a 1969 to '73 turquoise-colored vehicle of an unknown make and model, with windows on both of the rear double doors, no windows on the left side, and the license plate mounted on the left rear door. The driver was a male Caucasian, about 24 to 30 years old, with brown, curly, medium-length hair, small or droopy eyes, and a deep tan.



Nancy Patricia Gidley (24).

Missing: July 12, 1973.

Found: July 15, 1973.

San Francisco city, CA.

Was last seen alive leaving the Rodeway Inn at 895 Geary Street, San Francisco. Found lying in a parking lot of George Washington High School in the Richmond area, although it was believed she was murdered elsewhere. Nude, strangled, raped. No clothing found. Formerly stationed at Hamilton Air Force Base for four years, until the early months 1972, Miss Gidley an X-ray technician, arrived in San Francisco in mysterious circumstances, supposedly invited to be the maid of honor at a wedding, which apparently nobody was able to verify. Before leaving her home in Idaho, she also told close friends her intention to work as a freelance writer at the Chronicle Newspaper, but staff at the Chronicle, again, had never heard of her.



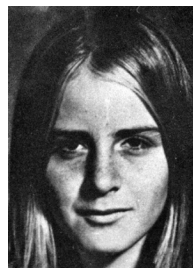
Caroline Nadine Davis (14).

Missing: July 15, 1973.

Found: July 31, 1973.

Garberville lies about 200 miles (320 km) north of San Francisco, and about 150 miles (240 km) north of Santa Rosa, CA.

Ran away from her home outside Anderson in Shasta County on February 6, 1973, but disappeared on July 15 after being dropped off by her grandmother at the Garberville Post Office. She was last seen hitchhiking that afternoon near the Highway 101 ramp, southbound, in Garberville. Her body was discovered just three feet from where the remains of Sterling and Weber had been recovered seven months prior. Cause of death was Strychnine poisoning 10–14 days before discovery. It could not be determined if she had been raped. Investigators postulated that her body had been thrown from the road as the hillside brush appeared undisturbed.



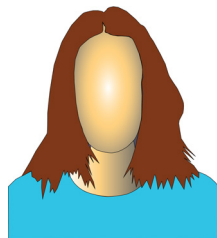
Nancy Darlene Feusi (23).

Missing: July 22, 1973.

Found: July 22, 1973.

Sacramento is an inland city about 62 miles (100 km) northeast of San Francisco, CA.

At the time of her death was living with her five children in a hotel room after separating seven months earlier from her husband over abuse and unfaithfulness. Last seen 3000 block, 42nd Street in Sacramento, at dance, accompanied by adult negro males. Had sexual intercourse with a negro male on evening of dance. Found on roadside at Riego and Pleasant Grove Road, in rural area. Clad in a miniskirt and bikini-type briefs. A blouse was found nearby. Stabbed 29 times in stomach, chest and arm.



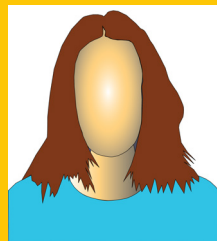
Jane Doe (15-20).

Missing: ? [Ted cannot be ruled out for this victim].

Found: July 27, 1973.

Lake Desire lies below the southern end of Lake Washington, Seattle, WA.

Lake Desire, King County. Dogs found a lower left leg and foot encased in blue denim pants and also a right femur. Ankles had been tied and bones may have been pared down.



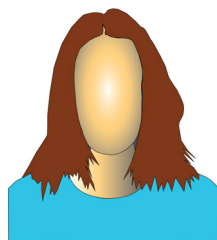
Martha Joan Stevens (19).

Missing: August 19, 1973.

Found: August 29, 1973.

San Francisco city, CA.

Last seen hitchhiking to San Francisco, dropped off near Hollywood Bowl by person she rode with from Colorado to LA. Found 6.5 miles past 1/2 Way Inn in Gorda, 50 yards up Soda Springs Creek in a National Wilderness area. Decomposed. Nude except for T-shirt pulled up to neck area, lying on back with knees up and legs spread wide apart. Strangulation. Bathing suit located around left ankle had been slit from top to bottom. All other clothing articles left at scene. Bashed in the head with an axe-shaped rock.



Corrine June Groenenberg (14).

Missing: November 1, 1973.

Not found.

Compton is a suburb between Los Angeles city and Long Beach, CA.

Last seen departing her family's Compton, California residence on November 1, 1973. A friend told authorities they saw Corrine walk to a nearby highway and hitch hike. The friend saw Corrine enter a blue or green pick up truck with an unknown male driver. She has never been seen since, and her case remains unsolved.



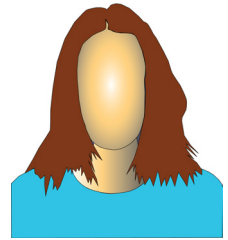
Laura O'Dell (21).

Missing: November 4, 1973.

Found: November 7, 1973.

San Francisco city, CA.

Last seen leaving halfway house for mentally ill, enroute home via bus 8:30 p.m. Found in shrubbery in Golden Gate Park. Nude from waist down, hands bound behind with strap from her shoulder bag. Strangled, beaten with thin blunt instrument, raped. Had past history of mental illness. The location where her body was found is directly opposite 1252 15th Ave, San Francisco, where Ted stayed some time during 1970 according to the Ted Bundy Multiagency Investigative Team Report 1992.



Therese Diane Walsh (23).

Missing: December 22, 1973.

Found: December 28, 1973.

Malibu is an oceanside suburb of Los Angeles, CA.

She was last known to be hitchhiking on Highway 101 from the area of Malibu Beach to her home in Gaberville intent on joining her family for Christmas. A sliver hand-made cross swung from her neck, a fire-opal ring and a copper-band ring flashed on her fingers. Ted dollars of colored beads she used for making bracelets rattled in her backpack. Her partially submerged body was located under a log in the water of Mark West Creek in Santa Rosa, near the spot where Kim Wendy Allen's was found. She had been hog-tied with a one-quarter-inch nylon rope – her hands bound in front of her and pulled down between her legs, her feet tied and pulled back by the rope that was also tied around her neck, strangulating her. She had been sexually assaulted. No clothing found. Due to recent heavy rains in the area, high water marks suggested the body could have drifted several miles.



Lulaida Morales Sejalbo (17).

Missing: November 25, 1973.

Not found.

Santa Clara is a suburb of greater San Francisco, CA.

Disappeared on her way home from work, Santa Clara, California (a suburb of San Francisco near Palo Alto where Ted had previously studied and temporarily lived). Her car was recovered with her purse and keys in it.



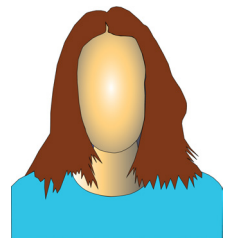
D'Ann Kathleen Hammond (18).

Missing: January 19, 1974.

Found: January 26, 1974.

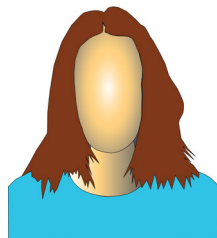
Sunnyvale is a suburb of greater San Francisco, CA.

Disappeared from her home in Sunnyvale. Found on a remote beach area along Highway 1 below a low cliff. Nude. Died as a result of blow to head and broken back. Possible fall from nearby low cliff. Vehicle, purse, clothing not recovered. Had knowledge of crime committed by suspect. Had received threats by phone. Victim reportedly had suicidal tendencies.



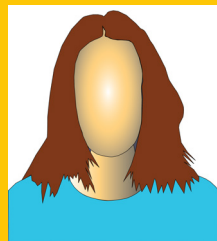
Lisa Ann Beery (15).
 Missing: January 26, 1974.
 Found: July 1979.
 Montclair is a suburb of the San Francisco Bay Area, CA.

Hughes and Perrin kidnapped Beery at knifepoint near her Montclair home and took her to an Oakland home where Hughes stabbed and raped the choir girl. Police found her body five years later buried on a Moraga (Rheem) hillside. [PHILIP JOSEPH HUGHES convicted].



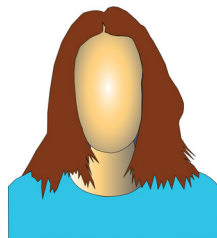
Barbara Ann Barry (18).
 Missing: Mid February, 1974 [Ted cannot be ruled out for this period].
 Found: March 29, 1974.
 Highway 14 traverses east out of Vancouver, WA, before heading to northeast Goldendale.

Last seen hitchhiking on Highway 14 to Goldendale. When found, estimated length of death was 6 weeks. Cause of death was stabbing. She was known to be promiscuous with any male aged 16-55. Body was badly decomposed. Missing a bra. Evidence of the area was hampered due to U.S. Army from Fort Lewis bivouacking in the same area and policing it before leaving. One soldier remembers finding a bra and throwing it in a creek.



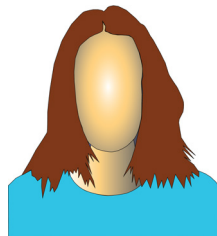
Janet Ann Taylor (21- 22).
 Missing: ?
 Found: ?
 Stanford lies just west of Palo Alto, a suburb of San Francisco, CA.

Last seen near Stanford campus hitchhiking. Found in a ditch off Sand Hill Road near Searsville Lake In the rolling hills behind the Stanford University campus - beside rural road (dead 15 hours), 2 miles from where last seen, near the intersection of Mayfield Ave. and Junipero Serra Blvd. Manually strangled. Not raped. Clothes found except shoes. Shoes, purse, bracelet missing. Pretty, auburn-haired.



Donna Marie Braun (14).
 Missing: September 29, 1974.
 Found: September 29, 1974.
 Greenfield lies about 140 miles (225 km) south of San Francisco, CA, and about 35 miles (56 km) inland.

Found floating in Salinas River near city of Greenfield, Monterey County. Strangled, dumped nude. No clothing found. She was still relatively warm when found. Unknown if sexually molested.



Arlis Perry (19).

Missing: October 12, 1974.

Found: October 13, 1974.

Stanford lies just west of Palo Alto, a suburb of San Francisco, CA.

Arlis was walking around campus with her husband (then a sophomore pre-med student) disputing the air pressure in their car's tires. They parted ways, and she went to pray at Stanford Memorial Church on the grounds of Stanford University, a frequent place of meditation for the two. "It wasn't unusual for her to be at church, except that she was killed," Bruce Perry said. He reported her missing at 3 a.m. and again at 6:55 a.m. Around 5:45 a.m., Arlis' body was found near the altar, half-hidden under a pew, by a security guard opening the church for services. She lay face up on the floor of the east transept, nude from the waist down and violated by two-foot-long candles carefully removed from the candleholders. There was no sign of a violent struggle and, except for the missing candles. Dean of the Chapel, Robert G. H. Kelly, said that the church's pulpit had not been disturbed. The coroner's report revealed that Arlis died around midnight, following ice pick wounds to the back of her head. She had not been raped. The case is still unsolved. A 2004 San Jose Mercury News article noted that Santa Clara County sheriff's detectives worked on the case for hundreds of hours. Bruce Perry was ruled out as a suspect, along with various individuals who had access to the church at the time of Arlis' murder. The couple, married fewer than two months before the crime, lived in an Escondido Village apartment. Arlis Perry had been working as a receptionist at a Palo Alto law firm for two weeks before her death.



Janna Marie Hanson (13).

Missing: December 26, 1974 [Ted can be ruled out for this date].

Found: August 2, 1975.

Edmonds is a bay-side suburb about 19 miles (30 km) north of Seattle, WA.

Last seen in her Edmonds apartment house in Mountlake Terrace. Her skull was later found prompting a wider search. Searchers later found two earrings, part of a scarf, and strands of hair. King and Snohomish county authorities said that there was no evidence linking Hanson's death with the Taylor Mountain findings earlier in the year (*The Spokesman-Review*, August 7, 1975). Someone fitting Hanson's description was seen hitchhiking early March 1975 on Lake Paradise Road, two miles from where her skull was found (*The Spokesman-Review*, August 19, 1975).



Loralee Sue Lhotka (19).

Missing: January 1975 [Ted can be ruled out for this period].

Not found.

Seattle city, WA.

Last seen Seattle after leaving home to go to a doctor's appointment. She never made it. She was supposed to take the bus, but she may have hitchhiked instead. Her wallet was found in the Wenatchee National Forest sometime in 1978.



Letitia Fagot (25).

Missing: March 19, 1975.

Found: March 19, 1975.

Walnut Creek is a suburb of greater San Francisco, CA.

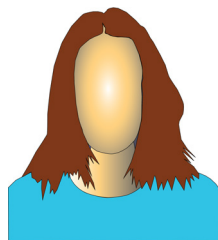
PHILIP JOSEPH HUGHES Jr, then a Pleasanton janitor, broke into the Walnut Creek house of Fagot on Los Cerros Ave, just a few blocks away from San Pedro Ct. Fagot worked at the French Bank of California in San Francisco with Hughes' wife (Suzanne Perrin), who suggested he target her. Hughes strangled her with a cord and beat Fagot with a hammer.

Police arrested Hughes was arrested in July 1979 (aged 31) after his wife gave him in. Hughes is suspected of three other killings:

- Lisa Dickinson, 9, disappeared Sept. 5, 1976 while riding her bike from her home on Los Cerros Avenue in Walnut Creek toward Heather Farms Park. Her bike was found leaning against a tree inside the park, but the girl has never been found. Louis Fresquiz is currently the prime suspect in her disappearance.

- Lou Ellen Burleigh, 21, of Walnut Creek vanished Sept. 11, 1977 on her way to a job interview at a Pleasant Hill shopping center on Contra Costa Boulevard.

- Tara Cossey, 9, was last seen while walking to the Pirelli's Liquor store in San Pablo to purchase a bag of sugar for her mother on June 6, 1979.



Mona Jean Gallegos (22)

Missing: June 19, 1975.

Found: November 1975.

Alhambra is an inner east suburb of Los Angeles, CA.

Mona Jean Gallegos, of Hispanic descent, was last seen leaving a friend's house around 1:00 a.m. She was returning to her Covina home from Alhambra when she vanished. Her 1970 Pontiac was later found on the San Bernardino Freeway at the Santa Anita Avenue off ramp in El Monte around 4:45 a.m. It was locked and out of gas and had body damage on the right front fender and was inoperable. There was a 24 hour gas station near the off-ramp where her car stalled out, and detectives believe someone offered her a ride to that gas station. She was last seen she was wearing a red and white pantsuit and white shoes. Six months later, her skeletal remains were found in a Riverside ravine.

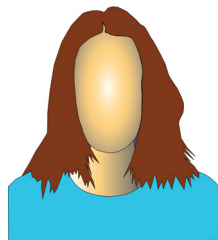


Tina Marie Mingus (16).

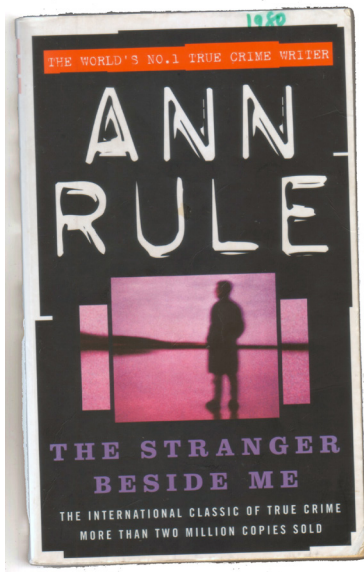
Missing: October 1975.

Salem is a city in Oregon. It lies about 37 miles (60 km) south of Portland, OR.

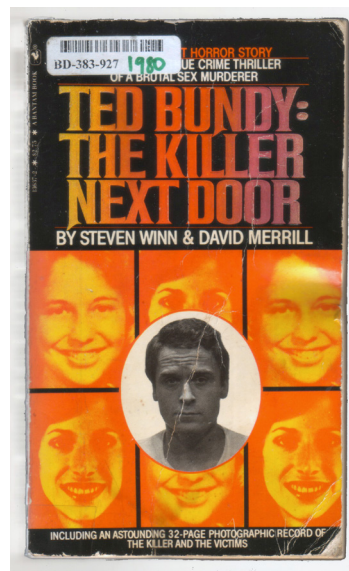
Salem. The body of Mingus was found. Nothing else is known about her.



Book versions consulted



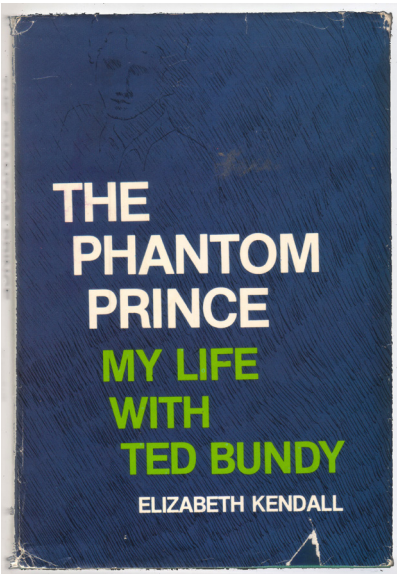
2006, Time Warner Books.
Original published 1980.



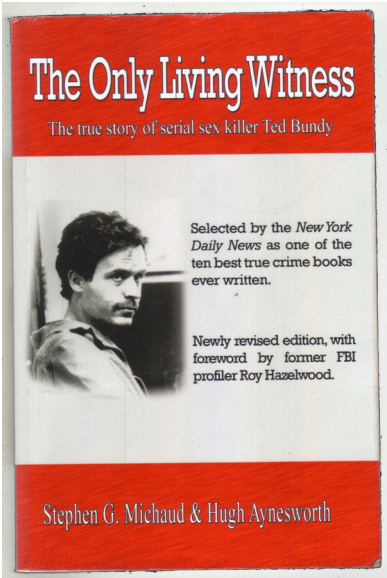
1980, Bantam



1980, Prentice-Hall



1981, Madrona Publishers



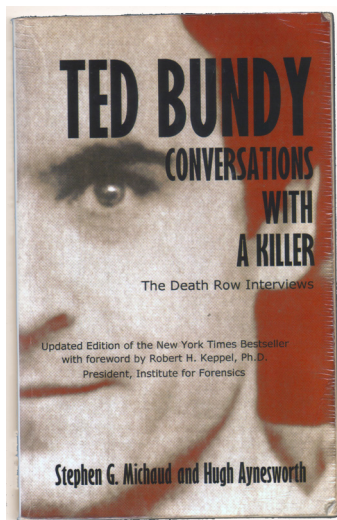
1999, Authorlink Press; first published 1983.



1994, William Morrow and Company, Inc.



1997, Sondra London & Feral House



2000, Authorlink Press

THE RIVERMAN

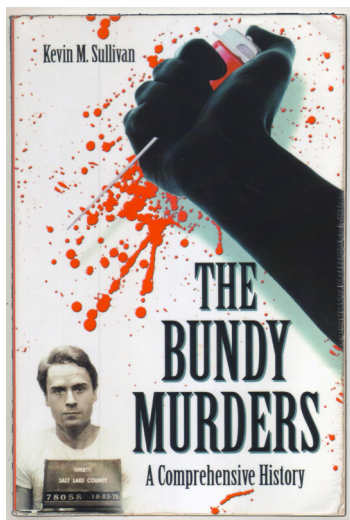
TED BUNDY AND I HUNT FOR THE GREEN RIVER KILLER

ROBERT D. KEPPEL, PH.D.,
with WILLIAM J. BIRNES
Foreword by ANN RULE
Revised and Updated
with Details of the Confession
of Gary Leon Ridgway

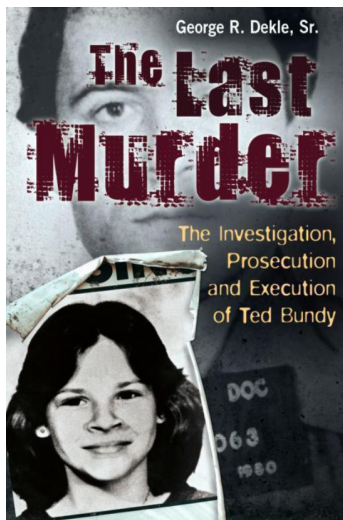


POCKET BOOKS
New York London Toronto Sydney

2005, Pocket Books



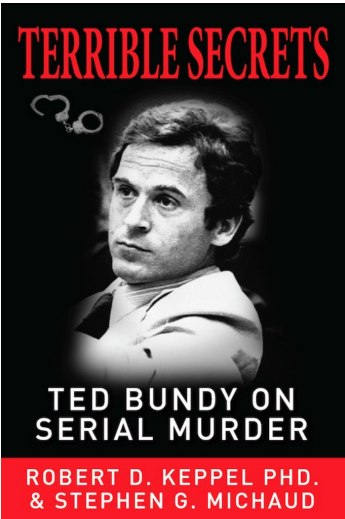
2009, McFarland & Company, Inc.



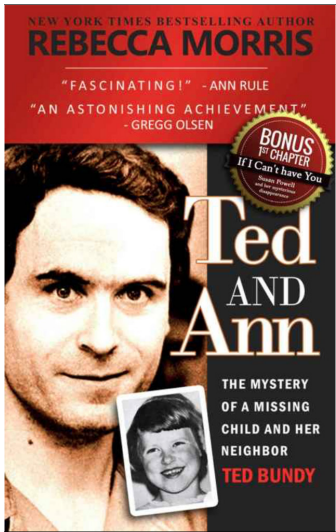
2011, Praeger



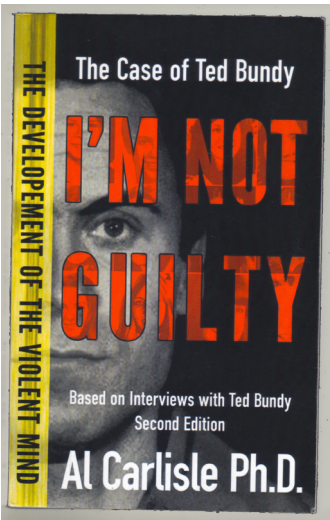
2011, Lulu



2012, MT7 Productions



2013, True Books



2014, Genius Book Publishing



Dr. Rob Dielenberg was born in Melbourne. He played in rock bands until his mid-20s, then earned a BA (Psychology) and Ph.D. (Neuroscience) from the University of Sydney. In between his degrees he did a year of clinical psychology, a year of TAFE sciences, and a 2-year fiction writing course. He retired as a post-doctoral fellow and went freelance in 2005. For the last decade he has diversified into areas such as neuroanthropology and criminology. He is also a co-director of Motion Mensura which develops tracking software and UAVs for high resolution mapping. He is married without children. His hobbies are tennis and cross-country mountain bicycle riding. He currently resides in Newcastle, Australia.



Chris Mortensen is married and lives in Salt Lake City, working as a high school teacher, with a BS in Severe Needs Special Education from the University of Utah, and a M.Ed. in Reading Literacy from Belhaven University. Born and raised in Sonora Ca, he moved to the Roaring Fork Valley area of Colorado in 1992. Moving to Salt Lake City in 2001, Chris has always been fascinated with local Utah history, and has spent many hours researching local criminology and urban development, conducting many interviews with local policemen and longtime residents. Chris enjoys playing multiple instruments with various bands which he has continued since his teen years, and loves exploring the Western United States by car in his free time.



Charles “Chuck” Meeks grew up in Pocatello, Idaho, and is retired from the United States Air Force. During his 22 year career in the military, he was a nuclear weapons specialist and later an imagery analyst. While on active duty, he was fortunate to have been stationed at various bases throughout Europe and able to experience many different cultures. He is currently a full time graduate student working on an MS in Clinical Counseling, having also earned a BS in Business Information Systems and an AS in Munitions Systems Technology. His hobbies include target shooting, board gaming, and photography. He is married with no children and currently resides in Bellevue, Nebraska.